





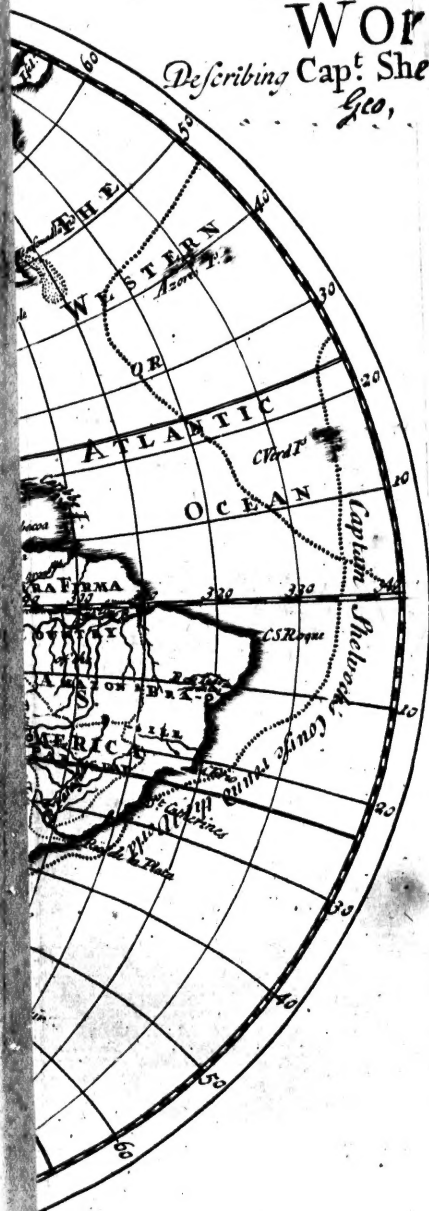
Front the Tide

A Correct *map* of the  
**World**  
*Describing* Cap<sup>t</sup>. Shelborne's *Voyage*  
*Geo.*

Equinoctial Line

A Correct map of the  
World

Describing Cap<sup>t</sup>. Shelbrooke's Voyage  
Geo,



Per

Prin

the  
voyage

ing A  
1712 or 18

A  
V O Y A G E  
Round the  
W O R L D,

By the Way of the

*Great South Sea:*

Performed in a private EXPEDITION during the War, which  
broke out with SPAIN, in the Year 1718.

---

By Capt. GEORGE SHELVOCKE.

---

The SECOND EDITION, revised and republished  
By GEORGE SHELVOCKE, *Esq;*

---



L O N D O N :

Printed for W. INNES and J. RICHARDSON, M. & T. LONGMAN,  
in Pater-noster-row. MDCCLVII.

W. INNES.

nw  
910.4  
S545.2

THE NEW YORK  
PUBLIC LIBRARY  
**158734**  
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS  
1899

SOLD

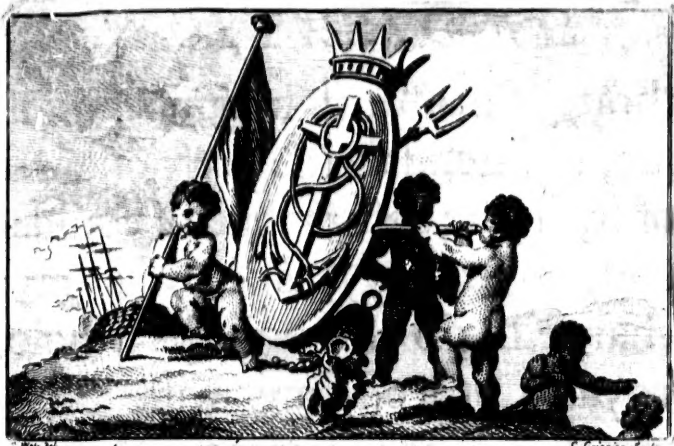


2



th

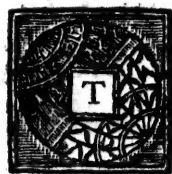
Photo 1



To the RIGHT HONOURABLE

*The Earl Temple; Honourable Edward  
Boscawen, Esq; Temple West, Esq;  
George Hay, L. L. D. Thomas  
Orby Hunter, Esq; Gilbert Elliot,  
Esq; Honourable John Forbes, Esq;  
Lords Commissioners for executing the  
Office of Lord High Admiral of  
Great Britain, &c.*

*My Lords,*



HERE having, for  
some years past, been  
a design to republish  
this, my late father's, voyage, I

A 2 thought



## DEDICATION.

thought it a duty incumbent on me, to attend to the performance of it, in the best manner I could; and, especially, as it was my chance to go through the whole voyage, in company with him, myself. The advantages it may have derived from this circumstance, may be too inconsiderable for me to say; but, such as it is, I beg leave to present it to your Lordships.

It could, certainly, have been no where else offered with more propriety, and as every attempt of this kind, may, in time, be of use, to extend the limits of our navigation and commerce; I persuade myself I can stand in no need of an apology, with your Lordships, upon this occasion.



## DEDICATION.

sion, as, by virtue of your office, you are so eminently and immediately concerned for the prosperity and preservation of both the one and the other.

It is with this presumption that I beg leave, with very great deference and respect, to subscribe myself,

*Your Lordships*

*Most Obedient and*

*Most Humble Servant,*

GEORGE SHELVOCKE.



---

---

## P R E F A C E.

**T**Hough, after so long an interval of time, it may be needless to revive the original preface, which appeared with the first impression of this voyage, in the year one thousand seven hundred and twenty-six, it may, nevertheless, be necessary to acquaint the reader, that two ships were employed in this expedition, the one called the *Success*, a river built galley, which carried thirty odd guns, and the other called the *Speedwell*, a foreign built ship, which mounted twenty odd guns, both of them much too small for the force they were design'd to be of, both in regard to the number of men and guns. The *Success* was commanded by Captain John Clipperton, who had served in the South Seas, under Captain Dampier. The *Speedwell*

was commanded by Captain George Shelvocke, who had been bred a seaman under Admiral Benbow, and had gone through a regular course of service in the Royal Navy, where he had acquired the reputation of an excellent officer, and a gentleman without reproach, with all that knew him, and among the rest, with some in high command, under whom he served as lieutenant, in some of the great ships, and by whom, if they had lived, he might have been more particularly distinguished.

Captain Clipperton having been in the South Seas more than once, it was thought proper he should have the largest ship, and the chief command, and Captain Shelvocke was to serve under him. These two ships were to act in concert together, for the good of one common interest; but being separated by a violent storm at sea,  
soon

# P R E F A C E. iii

soon after they left Plymouth, the ships themselves became divided for ever afterwards, though the men themselves met more than once, after a very long space of time, and in very distant parts of the world. After this, no more need to be said, by way of introduction to the voyage itself, except it be that the reader is entreated to excuse some errors of the press, the most material of which, it is hoped, are corrected in the following table of errors.

## E R R A T A.

Page 21, l. 25, for *ther* read *other*. p. 69, l. 11, for *striats* read *straits*. p. 70, for *South by West, and East by South*, read *South and by West, and East and by South*. p. 77, for *North East by East, and South East by South*, read *North East and by East, and South East and by South*. In the same paragraph, for *distance* read *distant*. p. 119, l. 15, for *this* read *By this*. p. 131 l. 13, for *flashing* read *flashing*, l. 18, for *got to* read *got*. p. 170, in the title of section V. for *twenty-eight* read *eighteen degrees*. p. 180, l. 20, for *East by South* read *East and by South*. p. 262, 13 for *resembling* read *resemble*. p. 336, l. 23, for *very* read *a very*. p. 411, l. 17, for *tract* read *track*. p. 414, l. 10, for *West by North* read *West and by North*, and lower down, in two places, for *North by West* read *North and by West*. p. 448, l. 24, for *work* read *worked*.

---

---

# T H E C O N T E N T S.

## SECTION I. Page 1

### S E C T. II.

|                                                                                                                                                                 |    |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----|
| <i>Arrival at the island of St. Catherine's, on the coast of</i><br><i>Brasil, in the latitude of twenty-seven degrees, thirty mi-</i><br><i>minutes South.</i> | 18 |
| <i>Account of the island of St. Catherine's.</i>                                                                                                                | 54 |
| <i>The Voyage continued.</i>                                                                                                                                    | 59 |

### S E C T. III.

|                                                                                                  |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival at the island of Chiloe, on the coast of Chili.</i>                                   | 83  |
| <i>An Account of the island of Chiloe, on the coast of Chili,</i><br><i>and its inhabitants.</i> | 107 |
| <i>Voyage continued.</i>                                                                         | 120 |

### S E C T. IV.

|                                                                                                                                                                        |     |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival in the Bay of Conception, in the latitude of thirty</i><br><i>six degrees South, on the coast of Chili, and transactions</i><br><i>whilst we lay there.</i> | 127 |
| <i>Description of the bay of Conception.</i>                                                                                                                           | 159 |
| <i>Voyage continued.</i>                                                                                                                                               | 161 |

### S E C T. V.

|                                                                                                                                                                     |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival in the road of Arica, in the latitude of eighteen de-</i><br><i>grees, twenty minutes South, on the coast of Peru, and</i><br><i>transactions there.</i> | 170 |
| <i>Voyage continued.</i>                                                                                                                                            | 178 |
| <i>Arrival at the islands of Lobos.</i>                                                                                                                             | 188 |
| <i>Description of the isles of Lobos.</i>                                                                                                                           | 190 |

### S E C T. VI.

|                                                                                                                                                       |  |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|
| <i>Arrival in the cove of Payta, on the coast of Peru; an ac-</i><br><i>count of our transactions there, particularly of our taking</i><br><i>the</i> |  |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|



## CONTENTS.

|                                                                                  |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>the town of Payta, and engaging with the Spanish Admiral in that harbour.</i> | 193 |
| <i>Second arrival at the island of Juan Fernandes.</i>                           | 212 |

### S E C T. VII.

|                                                                                                                                                                          |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>An account of the most remarkable transactions and occurrences, during the time of our stay on the island of Juan Fernandes, after we had been shipwreck'd there.</i> | 215 |
| <i>Our manner of living on the island of Juan Fernandes.</i>                                                                                                             | 251 |
| <i>Description of the island of Juan Fernandes, in the latitude of thirty-three degrees, and thirty minutes South, on the coast of Chili.</i>                            | 254 |
| <i>Departure from the island of Juan Fernandes, in the bark we built there, called the Recovery.</i>                                                                     | 267 |
| <i>Description of the island of Iquique, and the high land of Carapucho, in the latitude of nineteen degrees, fifty minutes South, on the coast of Peru.</i>             | 278 |

### S E C T. VIII.

|                                                                                                                                                                                 |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival in the road of Pisco, in the latitude of thirteen degrees, forty-five minutes South, on the coast of Peru, where we take a Spanish ship called, the Jesus Maria.</i> | 285 |
| <i>Voyage continued in the Jesus Maria</i>                                                                                                                                      | 289 |

### S E C T. X.

|                                                                                                                                                                          |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Second arrival in the cove of Payta, in the latitude of five degrees, fifteen minutes South, on the coast of Peru, which town we take a second time by stratagem.</i> | 291 |
| <i>Description of the town of Payta, in the latitude of five degrees, fifteen minutes South, on the coast of Peru.</i>                                                   | 297 |
| <i>Voyage continued.</i>                                                                                                                                                 | 300 |

### S E C T. XI.

|                                                                                                                                                                                                               |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival at the island of Quibo, in the latitude of seven degrees, thirty minutes North, on the Western coast of Mexico; our transactions both there, and at point Mariato, in the gulph of St. Martin.</i> | 303 |
| <i>Voyage continued.</i>                                                                                                                                                                                      | 311 |

### S E C T.

# C O N T E N T S.

## S E C T. XII.

|                                                                                                                                                                     |     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival in the road of Sonsonate, in the latitude of thirteen degrees, North, on the coast of Mexico, where we take a Spanish ship called the Sacra Familia.</i> | 338 |
| <i>Description of the road of Sonsonate.</i>                                                                                                                        | 354 |
| <i>Voyage continued in the Sacra Familia.</i>                                                                                                                       | 355 |

## S E C T. XIII.

|                                                                                                                                      |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Third arrival at the island of Quibo, in the latitude of seven degrees, thirty minutes North, on the Western coast of Mexico.</i> | 364 |
| <i>Description of the island of Quibo, and Canal Bueno.</i>                                                                          | 366 |
| <i>Voyage continued.</i>                                                                                                             | 372 |

## S E C T. XIV.

|                                                                                                                                      |     |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival in Puerto Seguro, in the latitude of twenty-three degrees, five minutes North, in the Southermost part of California.</i> | 401 |
| <i>Description of the Southermost part of California, and its inhabitants.</i>                                                       | 410 |

## S E C T. XV.

|                                                                                                                                                                                              |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Containing some remarks on the passage into the Great South Sea, and some instructions to such as may, for the future, go to cruise on the Western coasts of North and South America.</i> | 426 |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

## S E C T. XVI.

|                                                                                                           |     |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Transactions in our passage between Puerto Seguro in California, and the river of Canton in China.</i> | 442 |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

## S E C T. XVII.

|                                                                |     |
|----------------------------------------------------------------|-----|
| <i>Arrival in the river of Canton, and transactions there.</i> | 459 |
|----------------------------------------------------------------|-----|

## S E C T. XVIII.

|                                                                                                                                  |  |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|
| <i>Containing an account of our passage from China to England, in the Cadogan East Indiaman, commanded by Captain John Hill.</i> |  |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--|

*thir-*  
*ere we*

338

354

355

*of se-*  
*coast of*

364

*o. 366*

372

*y-three*

*part of*

401

*and its*

410

*South*

*future,*

*South*

426

*Cali-*

442

*ce. 459*

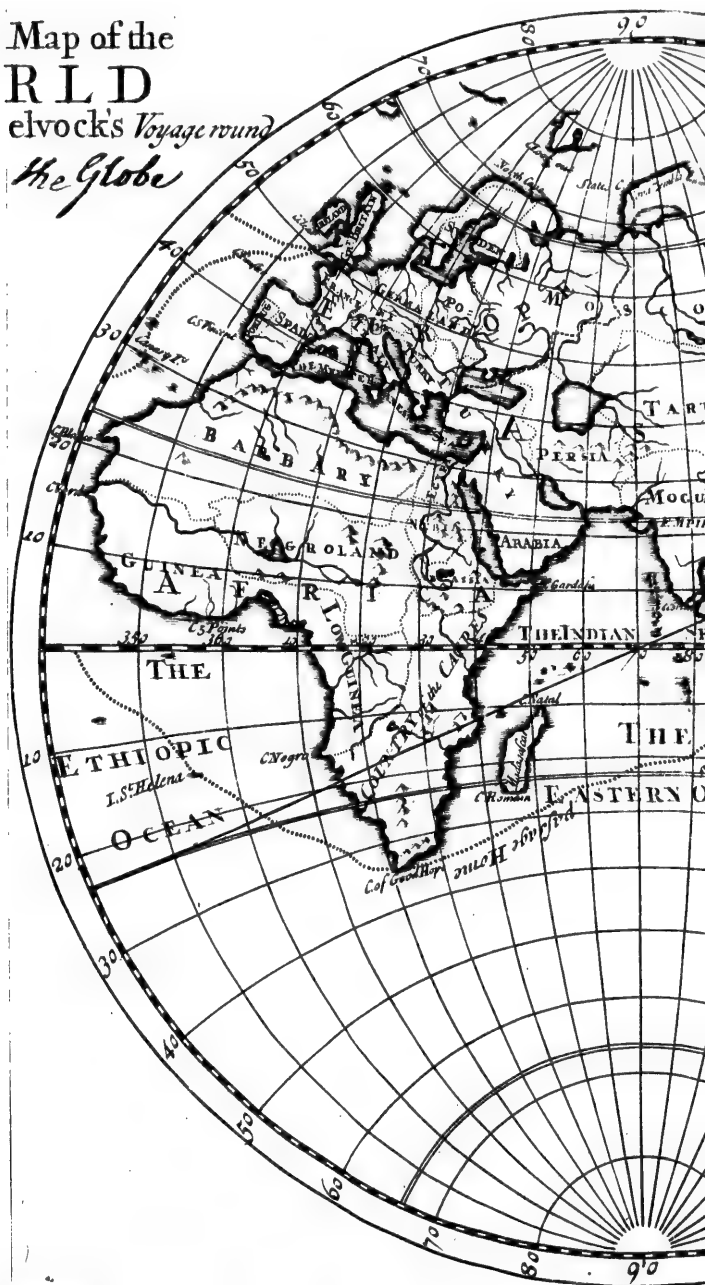
*England,*

*Captain*

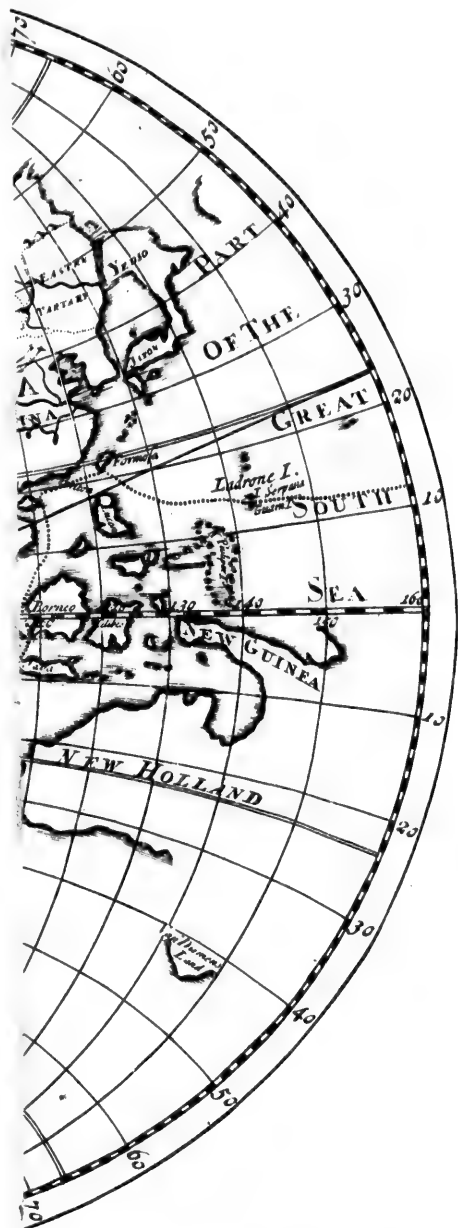
**AGE**

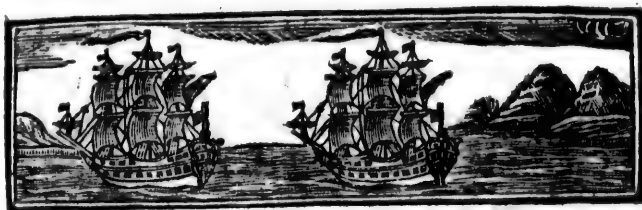


Map of the  
R L D  
elvock's *Voyage round*  
*the Globe*









A

V O Y A G E

R O U N D T H E

W O R L D.



T would be needless to give the reader an account of the many difficulties we met with in equipping our ships from England; my design herein being purely to relate whatever remarkable happened to us in the course of so long and dangerous a voyage, and withal to give a description of the different coasts and countries I saw (so far as came within the reach of my knowledge) whether for the service of the navigator, or the amusement of the curious. This being what I chiefly aim at, I shall endeavour to contract my re-

B

lation

A. D.  
1719.

A. D.  
1719

lation, so as it may neither deter the reader by a needless prolixity, nor leave him unsatisfied with an imperfect account of things.

On the thirteenth of February, one thousand, seven hundred and nineteen, we sailed from Plymouth, in company with the *Succes* of thirty-six guns, captain John Clipperton, who in consideration of his knowledge of the coasts and customs of Chili, Peru and Mexico, was to act as chief of the expedition.

Departure  
from England

On Sunday, February the fifteenth, I came under the *Succes*'s lee, and complained of the crankness of my ship, which proceeded from our having too much weight aloft; and therefore desired captain Clipperton to send for his wine and brandy, which I had on board, that I might have room to strike down some of my guns into the hold, which being done I did not doubt but that I should be able to hold him way. But this he entirely neglecting, he lost his sea stock of liquors; for we were, a night or two afterwards, separated by a violent storm, so that we never saw any thing of each other till about two years afterwards. We kept company together no longer than till Thursday, February the nineteenth, when between nine and

Separated  
from the *Suc-*  
cess by a storm



A. n  
17

ten o'clock at night, there came on a very violent storm of wind at South West, which obliged us to take in our topails. The gale encreasing upon us, and being very much pressed, I hauled up my foresail under the Success's lee, upon which she made a signal for bringing to. By eleven of the clock we were under bare poles, with our yards a portland, not being able to suffer one knot of canvas to be out all night, except, for a very little while, a reefed mizen. About midnight a sea struck us upon the quarter, and drove in one of our quarter, and one of our stern dead lights, where we shipped great quantities of water, before we were able to stop them up again. For a considerable time we were under continual apprehensions of foundering. This accident exposed us to the greatest danger. We were not able to get the ship before the wind, nor could we work the pumps upon deck, the lee pump being all the time under water; besides, that a succession of prodigious seas drove over us, so that no one could stand on his legs. In this melancholy state, the chain pump was the only thing we could have recourse to, and, by means of that, it pleased God we were delivered from impending destruction. When I

A. D.  
1719.

mention this, I must observe, that it is uncommon for ships not exceeding two hundred tons, to have chain pumps. In short, a seaman can judge what must have been our condition in a ship of not above two hundred tons, with eighteen six pounders mounted between decks, with a large launch, which rowed with fourteen oars, under our hatches, and with a hundred and one men on board of us, four fifths of which were land men, and crowded with provisions for so long a voyage. But all the damage we sustained, by this bad weather, was the spoiling of about a thousand weight of bread, and one barrel of powder, which the water came at.

February the twentieth. We had no fight of the Success or any other vessel whatsoever. At noon we set the mainsail double-reefed, and at midnight set the topsails and stood to the north-westward. In the morning the helm coat was washed away, and was not secured again without much difficulty.

The people  
mutiny.

This storm so terrified the greatest part of my ship's company, that I was informed no less than seventy of them were resolved upon bearing away for England, there to make complaint against the ship. They alledged she was so very crank she would never be able

to

A. D.  
1719.

to carry us to the South Seas. But on the twenty-third, having perceived some discontent to be amongst them, I ordered them all to come upon deck, and used what arguments with them I was master of, to encourage them to proceed; I told them that if the ship was  
'tender and unable to bear sail, it was caused  
'by her being pestered so much aloft, but that  
'as we were incumbered only with provisi-  
'ons, we should, in a little time, eat and  
'drink her into a better trim; that having  
'through providence escaped a most violent  
'tempest, a small spirt of wind would now  
'run us into fair weather; that I would take  
'all opportunities of repairing the defects  
'we were so sensible of in the late hard gale  
'of wind, and fill up our quarter and great  
'cabin lights (which were very large and  
'low) with firm plank; and having no aw-  
'ning, I promised to provide some shelter  
'for them over-head.' I at the same time  
assured them, 'that to my own knowledge,  
'our bottom was thoroughly refitted, and in  
'a perfect good condition; and reminded  
'them of the scheme of the voyage, which  
'formerly they were so well pleased with,  
'and which promised I might almost say,  
'a certain recompence for all the difficulties

A. D. 1719. ' we might have to encounter.' But all I could say was but to little purpose; for they continued in their resolution to clap the helm a *weather*, and grew to that height of insolence at last, that I was obliged to call upon my officers to assist in bringing these mutineers to reason. To this purpose they most of them appeared armed; and the sight of this so startled them, that they soon disbanded; and having ordered two of them to be made fast to the geers, to receive the punishment they deserved, I was prevented from doing what I designed, by some of their companions, who came in a very submissive manner, and begged I would forgive them, as I did, upon their promise for the future to behave themselves more obediently, and as became them. A little after this, observing them to be in some tolerable disposition, and inclined to be tractable, I ordered them some brandy, and they drank to our prosperous voyage, and I found that the dram being repeated, proved the best means of oversetting their wicked intentions. But the very evening after this, Simon Hatley, my second captain, instead of contributing (as he ought) all that was in his power to keep us quiet, had like to have thrown us into the utmost confusion, by taking

Simon Hatley disputes the command of the ship.

king an opportunity to dispute with me the command of the ship, telling me upon deck, and before most of the ship's company, that he had private orders from one of the chief of the Gentlemen Adventurers, and captain Clipperton, to take the charge of the the ship upon himself. I asked him if he had a private commission too? but to this he returned nothing but expressions of contempt for the commission, treating it as what was but of little value or consequence, alledging it was but just he should have the command, because he was the only person that had any knowledge of the South Seas, whither we were going. How far this might have prevailed amongst the people who had begun one mutiny by themselves, and were probably ripe for another, especially when headed by what they might think so considerable an officer, I cannot say; had not his unseamanlike behaviour, in the late storm, rendered him ridiculous to them, and apparently unfit for such a charge.

It may be imagined I was under no small uneasiness when I reflected on my ill success hitherto; to have been separated from captain Clipperton as before mentioned, and immediately after that, to find myself with a ship's company, I could not well expect any thing

A. D.  
1719.

from, but trouble and vexation ; and to have so soon the dissatisfaction of knowing I had an officer immediately next to me, from whose imprudence and misbehaviour, the worst was to be dreaded in the course of so long a voyage, could not but give me some uneasiness and alarm. It was not unreasonable to conceive, that those who could dare to be so insolent so near our own country, where I might, in a day or two have brought them to justice, would stick at little or nothing in remoter parts, where they might have plausible pretences for behaving as ill as they pleased.

Reflecting on all this, I found myself under a necessity to behave myself with all circumspection and precaution, to prevent our being divided into parties, or our being subject to the caprices and humours of an ignorant set of men, either of which was more than enough to frustrate the ends of our expedition.

We had a very tedious passage to our first place of rendezvous with our consort, which was the Canary Islands, where we were to cruize ten days for one another. In our way thither, we spake with several ships but could hear no news of the Success.

March

March the seventeenth, we arrived at the Canaries, and cruized out the time appointed by our instructions to meet with captain Clipperton there. During this but little remarkable happened, except that on the twenty-third, I sent my launch in chase of a small vessel we discovered under the Grand Canaries, whose people perceiving themselves pursued, ran their vessel ashore. My people with much difficulty got her off again, though she was hardly worth the trouble. She was only an open boat of about sixteen tons, with nothing in her but a small quantity of salt, and a quarter-cask of wine, the greatest part of which was drank by my boat's crew, before they brought their prize to the ship.

A. D.

1719.

Arrival at  
the Canaries.Where we  
took a small  
Vessel.

Having finished my cruize among these islands, without hearing any thing of the Success, I found myself in a very melancholy state. I was to consider that the next appointed place of rendezvous was at the island of Juan Fernandes, in the South Seas, and that I was to get thither by the way of the straits of Le Mair, and by going round cape Horn, a navigation I was apprehensive our ship was in no condition to cope with, and particularly as she was without any shelter to cover the people from the snow, or to defend them in any degree

A. D.  
1712.

gree from the rigours of so cold and so inhospitable a climate, or the assaults of such seas as we should have to pass through, in the more southerly tracks of our voyage. The prospect being so full of danger, it was necessary to employ all our thoughts how best to prepare ourselves for so perilous an undertaking. How, or at what place, this was to be effected, was the difficulty; however, I resolved not to look back, but to proceed in such a manner as might prevent the evils I could foresee, taking especial care to betray nothing in myself that might daunt or disunite my ship's company, or discourage them from proceeding on so perilous a voyage as ours might have seemed to them to be, in a ship we began to feel was so slenderly provided to carry us through it.

Departure  
from the Canaries.

Upon March the twenty-ninth, we took our departure from the island of Ferro, in hopes to meet with captain Clipperton among the islands of the Cape de Verd, and we took our prize along with us. But in our passage thither, my people began again to be discontented, and, in short, murmured among themselves, and grew to be so troublesome, that I thought I could do no less than keep the arms out of their reach, which I did by stowing them away in the bread-room.

Upon



Upon Saturday April the fourteenth in the morning, we made the isle of May, and running along shore, we saw a wreck, and an English ship's ensign flying near a great smook on the land, and a small sloop in the bay, near the wreck. We stood in for information, and a boat came off to us, and told us it was the Vanzittern East-India-man, captain Hide, commander, who had had the misfortune of running ashore there about three weeks before. Upon the hearing of this, I began to think we might here supply ourselves with what necessaries we wanted. With this view I enquired of the mate, if I could have the purchase of any planks or nails out of the wreck, and he told me the ships in the road to leeward, had got every thing that could be saved out of her. I therefore bore away for the road, but my entrance was opposed by all the ships there, who were about thirteen in number, and who fired several shot at me, mistaking me for a free-booter. But being soon satisfied of what we were, the mistaken commodore, with the rest of the masters, came on board of me, and asked my pardon, and promised to let me have whatever I stood in need of. So I came to an anchor; but at last

A. D.  
1719.

Arrival at  
the Isle of  
May.

The ships  
in the road  
oppose our  
entrance.

Upon

A. D. I got nothing of them, but two or three  
1719. sheathing boards, and about three tons and a  
half of falt.

Some time before our arrival here, Turner Stevens, my gunner, very gravely made a propofal to me, in the hearing of all the other officers, as we were fitting together, to go a cruizing in the Red Sea ; for, faid he, there can be no harm in robbing thofe Mahometans, but as for the poor Spaniards, continued he, they are good chriftians, and it would, doubtlefs, be a fin to injure them. Upon the hearing of this difcourfe, I ordered him under confinement ; and the man, after that, having threatened in a very outrageous manner, to blow up the fhip, I, for thefe reafons, and o-

The gunner  
difcharged.

thers as fufficient, difcharged him here, at his own request, which I was very glad to hear him make, and to fee every body elfe as well pleafed at his departure, as I could defire. I alfo difcharged my chief mate here, he having been guilty of many and great mifdemeanors. The night after we anchored here, he had the imprudence to quarrel with Mr. Brooks, the firft lieutenant, and to fight with him, which caufed a very great difturbance on board of us, for which I corrected him, but was very well fatisfied to find him

Chief mate  
difcharged

fo

so inclinable to leave us, he having been a very troublesome person in the ship.

A. D.  
1719.

Wednesday, April the eighteenth, at six in the morning, we weighed anchor from the Isle of May, and, the same morning, arrived in the road of Porto Praya on the island of St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verds. Here the captain major gave me some hope of assisting me with things I wanted, but day after day deceived me, so that I got nothing here but a few fresh provisions. At this place I sold our prize for one hundred and fifty dollars to the governor; and filled all our water casks, and gave my ship a very good heel. Six of my people having deserted from my launch here, I applied to the officer on shore to deliver them up to me again; but finding it was to no purpose, I thought of another method to get them back again: there was a Portuguese ship in the road, and I sent to the captain of her, to tell him I would have him go on shore in quest of my men, whom I understood the governor kept from me, and threatened to take the like number of men out of his ship, if he did not bring them off. Accordingly he went, and brought me off two of them, which happened to be the best, being both good seamen and drummers. They fell  
on

A. D.

1719.

on their knees and asked my pardon, assuring me the captain on shore had seduced them, by offering them extraordinary encouragement, if they would stay and sail in his service; it being his design to send the bark, I sold him, on the Vanzittern's wreck, where they might all make their fortunes; so I lost the other four. Finding I could neither hear of the Success, nor get what might be serviceable to us in this place, I sent an officer in the launch to the town of St. Jago, where the chief governor resides, to enquire of him, if he had heard of any ship among the other islands here. But he sent me word he had no advice of any; nor was there any thing to be purchased that might be useful to us at that town. There being now no probability left of seeing the Success before we should get into the South Seas, and not meeting with materials to fit the ship with as I had promised, I was at a stand to know how to proceed with these unruly fellows. But having, in Frezier's voyage, read of the island of St. Catherine's, on the coast of Brasil, in the latitude of twenty-seven degrees, thirty minutes South, which according to his account, afforded every thing we stood in need of, even without any expence, or at least in exchange for salt, which is very valuable there; and this being confirmed

A. D.  
1719.

firmed to me by one of my officers, who was a Frenchman, and this place lying in my passage, I could not but for these reasons conclude it would be best for me to put in there.

On Monday April the twentieth, we sailed from St. Jago. We began to heave up our anchor the day before, but in doing it we wrenched the drum-head of our capstane, which took us up the remainder of the day to repair; but we sailed the next day, as I have said above.

We happened to have a very long passage, and were one and twenty days before we could cross the equinoctial. While we were between the two trade winds, we had generally little variable breezes all round the compass, and sometimes we had great squalls of wind and rain, with thunder and lightning, and in short the most uncertain weather that can be imagined. We were five and fifty days in going to St. Catherine's, during which little remarkable happened, except that on Thursday June the fourth, we made cape Frio, bearing West of us, distant seven leagues.

Departure  
from the  
Cape de Verd  
Islands.

Our latitude by observation that day, at noon, was twenty-three degrees, forty-one minutes, South. On Friday the fifth in the afternoon, we saw a ship stemming with us, and spoke with

Arrival on  
the coast of  
Brasil.

During  
em, by  
ement,  
ice; it  
d him,  
might  
er four.  
Success,  
s in this  
he town  
sides, to  
y ship a-  
sent me  
there a-  
be useful  
o proba-  
e should  
ing with  
romised,  
eed with  
Frezier's  
herine's,  
of twen-  
n, which  
ery thing  
any ex-  
t, which  
ing con-  
firmed

- A. D. with her. I ordered the five-oar'd boat to be  
1719. hoisted out, and sent captain Hatley in her, to inquire after news on the coast, and gave him money to buy us some tobacco. The Success amongst other things had got our stock of tobacco on board of her, and had made what the seamen call a West-country famine on board of us. When Hatley returned from on board of this ship, he told me she was a Portugueze from Rio Janeiro, and bound to  
Met a Por-  
tugueze Ship. Fernambuco. Instead of tobacco, of which he said she had none to dispose of; he had laid out my money in china cups and plates, a little hand nest of drawers, four or five pieces of china silk, sweetmeats, bananas, plantains, and pompions, and the like; but upon my expressing my dissatisfaction at his having squandered away my money in so silly a manner; his answer was, 'that he thought what he did was for the best, that he had laid out his own money as well as mine, and, in his opinion, to a good advantage, and that, to his knowledge, the things he bought would sell for double the money they cost, at the next port we were going to.' However, I assured him I did not like his proceedings by any means. At noon our Latitude, by observation, was twenty-four degrees,  
twelve

twelve minutes South, meridian distance, six hundred and thirty-one miles Westward; the next day we saw a sail, which my people would fain have spoke with, but I would not suffer it.

On Friday, June the nineteenth, at eleven in the morning, we made the island of St. Catherine's, the Northermost end of it bearing South South West, distant four leagues. Saturday June the twentieth, at four in the afternoon, we saw the island of Gall, and the Eastermost island, bearing South East half East, distant six leagues. From four till five in the afternoon, we had but little wind, and steering South and by East, had gradual soundings from twenty to fifteen fathom. At nine at night we came to an anchor, the island of Gall bearing East and by North distant two leagues; from eight to nine we had gradual soundings from fifteen to ten fathom, and at five the next morning we hoisted out our launch, and ship'd the capstane. At seven we came to sail, and at ten anchored in ten fathom, the island of Gall bearing East North East, distant two leagues, and the Eastermost point of St. Catherine's, East and by South, distant four leagues.

A. D.

1719.



## S E C T. II.

*Arrival at the island of St. Catherine's,  
on the coast of Brazil, in the latitude  
of twenty-seven degrees, thirty mi-  
nutes South.*

UESDAY, June the twenty-third,  
we got up to the anchoring place at  
St. Catherine's, and found it to an-  
swer pretty well. There was timber enough,  
but it was to be cut down with our own tools,  
the islanders having nothing of that kind a-  
mongst them. The first thing I did was to  
send the carpenter on shore, with all the people,  
that could be useful to him in felling of trees,  
and sawing them into plank, and to order  
the cooper and his crew to trim the casks,  
and fill them with water. Those who remain-  
ed on board, I employed in new stowing of  
the hold that we might make room for our  
guns, and come at the meat casks, to give  
them a fresh supply of pickle. Others, in the  
mean time, were employed to overhaul the rig-  
ging and sails. I made all the dispatch I could,  
with the indifferent hands I had to deal with.

Mean





atherine's,  
be latitude  
hirty mi-

enty-third,  
ing place at  
nd it to an-  
per enough,  
rown tools,  
at kind a-  
did was to  
the people,  
ng of trees,  
d to order  
the casks,  
ho remain-  
stowing of  
m for our  
ks, to give  
hers, in the  
aul the rig-  
ch I could,  
deal with.

Mean

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

19

A. D.  
1719.

Mean while the captain of the island, and the  
it of the inhabitants, came off to us every day  
with the product of the place, which I pur-  
chased with salt, as long as I had any to spare.

On Thursday, July the second, we were <sup>Saw a large</sup> disturbed, at break of day, by the appearance <sup>Ship coming</sup> in.  
of a large ship at anchor under Parrots island,  
which being four or five miles below the place  
where we lay, I sent an officer in the launch,  
well manned and armed, to see what he could  
make of her, but with strict orders not to go  
on board her on any account whatsoever. In  
the mean time I had mounted two of my guns  
at the watering place, and posted a sufficient  
number of men and ammunition, to defend  
what we had there. This done, I hove apeak  
on my anchor, and laid warps to haul into  
shoal water, if there should have been a ne-  
cessity for our taking to it; in a word, I put my  
ship into the best posture of defence I could  
think of, or contrive. About noon my launch  
returned, and brought me word this ship was  
the Ruby, formerly an English man of war,  
and now one of monsieur Martinet's squadron;  
that she was come from the South Seas, and was  
commanded by Monsieur la Jonquiere; that  
he, his officers, and seamen were all French,  
to the number of about four hundred and

C 2

twenty,

A. D.

1719

twenty, and that though she was actually in the Spanish service, they had not the least design to molest us, having left the South Seas on the first advice of a rupture between the crowns of France and Spain. The manner how my lieutenant came to be so punctually informed of all this, was by a direct breach of the positive orders, I had given him, to avoid going on board of her. And truly all the excuse he had for his indiscretion was, that he was persuaded to it. This was but a poor pretence, and his temerity, or want of conduct might have cost me very dear; for had they been enemies, I should have lost twenty-three of the best hands I had belonging to me, together with their arms and accoutrements. But their return gave me room to hope there was some truth in the story this officer, and the people with him, had told me. It must however be allowed to have been a great misfortune, that I had not, to the best of my knowledge, one man of experience or capacity sufficient to enable him to perform the common duty of an officer. And yet, upon second thoughts, I can't tell whether it was not for the best, considering the course of things in the sequel of the voyage, when the ungovernable fellows, at times, looked and behaved

behaved themselves as if they only wanted some head they could depend upon.

A. D.

1719.

The next day, viz. July the third, the Ruby turned up towards us, when, not being thoroughly satisfied as to the disposition she might be in, I could not but have my apprehensions about her. But the French captain perceiving I suspected him, having my guns pointed, and every thing in apparent readiness for action, he came to an anchor short of us, and sent one of his lieutenants and a priest, to assure me of his friendship, and that he did not entertain any thought of doing me the least injury; but that, on the contrary, he should be ready to do me all the good offices that lay in his breast. This message removed all the mistrust I had of him, and I hove up to my moorings again. The next day Monsieur la Jonquiere sent me an invitation to dine with him, which I did, and met with the most handsom reception imaginable, together with offers of what money I would have upon my bills on London, or in general any thing else his ship afforded. Among ther things he told me, that when he came into the harbour's mouth, he had but sixteen guns mounted; but that upon seeing us, he had got up the rest of them, which in all

A. D.  
1719.

made fifty-four ; that he had several wealthy passengers on board of him, and that, in short, his ship was extremely rich in gold and silver. He likewise informed me that the Spaniards in the South Seas, had had advice of our two ships, and that they talked of fitting out some of their men of war to receive us. I desired that this piece of news might be kept secret if possible. He replied, that it should ; for that he believed none of his people knew any thing of it ; because they had not been on shore for a considerable time before they took leave of those seas. Upon this occasion, I thought it might not be improper to acquaint him, that the disposition of the generality of my ship's company was such, that if they heard of any thing that favoured of great difficulty, I should never have it in my power to make them proceed any farther. To this he was so kind as to answer, that he, and his officers would pay me a visit, and take an opportunity of giving my officers and people such probable hopes of success, in our enterprise, that they should not, for the future, be inclined to relinquish the Western coasts of America, to go to any other part of the world.

It was about this time there was a report spread, that Hatley had taken a bribe of the  
master

A. D.  
1719.

A. D.  
1719.

plaints of him, and particularly of his abusing their women in the grossest manner. I had been told, that he and a gang that used to go about with him, to buy fresh provisions, had threatened to ravish old and young, and set their houses on fire; and that they had actually burnt one, which the inhabitants had permitted us to make use of, as long as we had occasion for it. These and the like violences had like to have cost six of our people their lives, before we sailed, as shall be hereafter related.

The boat-  
swain raises  
a mutiny.

July the sixth, Monsieur la Jonquiere, according to his promise, came, accompanied by several of his officers and passengers, to dine with me. But in the midst of our entertainment, the strangers had a convincing proof of the nature and temper of those I had to deal with; for Hudson, my boatswain, took it into his head that he was ill used, and had not the respect paid him that was due to one in his post; because he had not been invited into the cabin as a guest. He affirmed, that though there were so many lieutenants and other officers, who were esteemed to be so much superior to him, yet, that in strict justice, he ought to be looked upon as the third man in the ship, though at  
the

A. D.  
1719.

the same time, neither the master, gunner nor carpenter, who were more properly his equals, were invited. The boatswain, to shew how much he resented this his imaginary ill treatment, resolved within himself to raise such an uproar, as should spoil the mirth and jollity of those, who thought themselves so much above him. To this purpose, and with the help and assistance of two or three more, who began to fancy themselves in his case, he first assaulted Betagh the captain of marines, and Mr. Adams the surgeon. This outrage being committed in the steerage, I stepped out to see what might be the cause of the noise that was made; but was surprized at the impudence of these fellows, who, when I came to enquire into the cause of this confusion, accosted me with all the saucy and insolent language they could think of. By the help of the rest of my officers, and the French gentlemen, I soon drubbed them into better manners; but it was as much as we could do, for their number was very considerably increased, by some of the petty officers and foremast-men. When all was pretty well quieted, Monsieur la Jonquiere desired he might have the liberty to speak a word or two, to these unruly fellows. He told them, that

‘ as

A. D. 1719. ' as he and his officers were eye-witnesses of  
' their piratical behaviour, if they persisted  
' in their disobedience to their captain, he  
' would see the ringleaders of them punished  
' at my request, by carrying them home in  
' irons.' And as they grew a little quieter,  
he expostulated with them, and appealed to  
themselves, whether they did not think it  
monstrous for people to behave themselves in  
such a manner. He reminded them of the  
prospect they had before them; and assured  
them it would be owing to themselves, if  
they failed of making their fortunes. He de-  
sired them to judge of the truth of what he  
said, by what they might observe of his own  
people, who were full of money, and yet, by  
what he could understand, had not half the en-  
couragement they had; and declared to them,  
he had not a man in his ship, who would not  
leave all his wages due to him, to serve me in  
this expedition. This speech from Monsieur  
la Jonquiere seemed to please the greatest part  
of them. However, it was but a melancholy  
reflection for me, that after having been thir-  
ty years an officer in the service, under the  
best regulated discipline in the world, I should  
be now harraßed with continual mutinies, and  
exposed to the unthinking malice and unac-  
countable



A. D.

1719.

countable humours of a ship's company, that ought to have been more strictly under my command. I must ingenuously profess, I dared not punish them as they deserved; and was certain that some of my chief officers, privately, approved of their actions, and indeed I afterwards found it to be so by their conduct. The next morning I was informed, that the authors of the disturbance were most of them sorry for what had happened the night before, throwing the blame of all upon the boatswain, and the effect of too much liquor. I was glad to hear this, and, therefore passed it all over with only threatening how I would manage them, if ever they were guilty of the like again. I had resolved to punish the boatswain in the severest manner; but I was prevailed on not to do it, he coming in a very humble plight, asking my pardon, and begging I would not use any severity towards him. He said it was drink that had made him mad, and withal desired I would give him leave to go home in the French ship. This I willingly agreed to, he being a very odd sort of a fellow, and always incensing the people against the number of officers, whom he termed Blood-suckers.

The

A. D.

1719.

The fifteenth of July, we saw a great ship plying into the harbour's mouth; but when she discovered us, she made the best of her way out again. This possessed Monsieur la Jonquiere with a notion of her being our comfort, and put him into the greatest confusion and hurry imaginable to be gone. Accordingly, when night came on, he weighed, and fell down the harbour, and went to sea the next morning, and at his departure saluted me with five guns. Three Frenchmen, belonging to me, went away with him. But I had two Frenchmen and one Morpew, an Irishman, in lieu of them. Upon the whole I cannot forbear saying, that Monsieur la Jonquiere was very civil and obliging to me, being very ready and willing to assist me with his advice, and notice of the state of affairs in the South Sea, and with every thing that might be of service to me in any respect.

During all this, our carpenter went on but slowly in the woods; which was attributed to the badness of the saw, and the want of some hands expert at the use of it. But to speak more plainly, they were very idle, and there was no driving them on faster than they were inclined to go. For my part, I had no spur they would be sensible of, but double allowance

A. D.

1719.

allowance of brandy, and, after all, they hardly deserved the water they drank. At length, when we came to fill up the stern, and to case it all over with thick firm plank, we could find, to my great astonishment, no nails fit for that use, or hardly any other, no not so much as any for the use of the pumps. Upon which there was no remedy left but to set the armourer to work, to make some; which he did, by the help of a forge and bellows, which were given me by the captain of the Ruby. I was now told, that the first carpenter, and his crew, had sold most of the stores before the ship came to Plymouth, which was before I commanded her, so that I never heard of it till now.

July the twenty-fifth, we were hindered again by the appearance of a large ship, coming in under French colours. She was called the Wife Solomon, of St. Malo's, of forty guns, and about a hundred and sixty men, commanded by Monsieur Dumain Girard, and bound to the coasts of Chili and Peru to trade. She was the same ship we saw coming in before, and had spoke with the Ruby at sea. This gentleman abused Monsieur la Jonquiere to me in the most scurrilous manner, calling him renegade, for having served

A French ship arrives in the harbour.

under

A. D.  
1719.

under a foreign crown, against his own countrymen ; for la Jonquiere being one of Martinet's Squadron, their business in the South Seas, was to sweep those coasts clear of the French interlopers, which they did very effectually. There was not above two or three, out of ten or twelve of them, that had escaped falling into Martinet's hands, who made them all legal prizes. Mr. Frezier was not much less obliged to Monsieur Dumain, and his officers, for a defamation of his character, in regard to his voyage to the South Seas, he often telling me, he would not have me trust to his description of the ports and places on the coast of Chili and Peru, because, to his knowledge, it was a book full of the grossest error. It was natural to suspect he had some end to serve, in endeavouring to give me a mistrust and ill opinion of Monsieur Frezier's performance, and that his view might have been to misinform and mislead me ; but I soon perceived, notwithstanding a little forced civility at his first arrival, that he was a designing mercenary man, and full of all the conceit and vanity that has been ascribed to his nation. He pretended to make a stay here of two or three months, for a better season to go about Cape Horn with, and therefore

fore, as soon as he had anchored, he sent some of his people on shore, to dig a small garden, to raise greens in.

A. D.

1719.

Desiring this gentleman to spare me some nails, he readily answered he would ; but, at the same time, gave to understand they would come very dear, for that he could not afford them for less than thirty-two dollars a hundred, which sum I was glad to give him, as it would have been an endless business for my armourer to make a sufficient number for the present, and for future use. I likewise bought of him sixty cheeses, and three hundred weight of butter, to add to our stock of provisions ; so that it happened well, for me, that I had some money from one of the Ruby's people. This being done, I thought myself in a tolerable way of making a very quick dispatch from this place, when there came a letter from my ship's company to me, with Articles annexed to it, which they said they were resolved to insist on, threatening that they would not stir a step to sea, till what they demanded was securely agreed to by me, and the chief officers, according to their desire ; and I think it will not be amiss to insert a copy of the letter and articles as follows.

On

A. D.

1719.

On board the Speedwell,  
July, 31, 1719.

HONOURED SIR,

‘ THE reason of our troubling you at  
‘ this time with the Articles on the o-  
‘ ther side, are chiefly these, *viz.* we have  
‘ very good reason to believe, that if what  
‘ we shall have the fortune to make this voy-  
‘ age, should be carried to London, we  
‘ should never receive half thereof; for it is  
‘ known to all, how the people on board the  
‘ ships Duke and Dutcheſs were treated, and  
‘ if we carry our money to London, can ex-  
‘ pect no better treatment. Secondly, That  
‘ the articles we ſigned at Plymouth, were  
‘ never read in our hearing, neither would  
‘ Mr. Godfrey allow us to read the ſame.  
‘ He told us they were the ſame with thoſe  
‘ on the cabin door, though we are now af-  
‘ ſured of the contrary, One thing we ſaw  
‘ in them was, that there was three times  
‘ as much writing in them, as in thoſe on  
‘ the cabin door, and written by ſeveral  
‘ hands, and interlined in a great many pla-  
‘ ces, which we do not know the meaning  
‘ of. And laſtly, how dangerous is it for  
‘ poor

‘ poor men to trust their fortune in the hands  
‘ of rich men ?

A D.

1719.

‘ By sharing the money as soon as possi-  
‘ ble, we design nothing against the good of  
‘ the voyage and owners ; for we shall all  
‘ do our endeavours to see them get their  
‘ shares, and as to our desiring plunder, we  
‘ have desired nothing but what the people  
‘ on board the Duke and Dutchess had be-  
‘ fore us. We hope you will not take it  
‘ amiss that we have made bold with what  
‘ we will insist upon as our due right, which  
‘ is designed for no harm to the owners, and  
‘ to the good of us all, we are sure it will  
‘ make every thing to be easy among us,  
‘ and it will always make us willing to ven-  
‘ ture our lives in behalf of ourselves and  
‘ owners. You may also be assured of our  
‘ respect towards you. We shall always think  
‘ ourselves happy under such a commander,  
‘ and we pray that God may long preserve  
‘ you in life and health, and guide you in all  
‘ your actions, which we shall reckon a bless-  
‘ ing bestowed on us. We are, with all  
‘ humble respect,

S I R,

Your most humble servants,

D

MATTHEW

A. D.  
1719.

MATTHEW STEWART, Mate.

JAMES HOPKINS, Mate.

JOHN SPRAKE, Mate.

ROBERT DAVENPORT, Carpenter.

GILBERT HENDERSON, Gunner.

GILBERT HAMILTON, Ensign of Marines.

NICHOLAS LAMING, Boatswain.

WILLIAM MORGAN, Surgeon's Mate.

JOHN DOIDGE, Surgeon's Mate.

Besides these, all the petty officers, and thirty-six of the chief foremast men, set their hands to this letter.

Here follows a copy of the Articles which they subjoined for the regulation of Plunder, *viz.*

‘ Imprimis, That our part of each prize  
‘ we take, shall be equally divided, as soon  
‘ as possible, after the capture thereof, be-  
‘ tween the ship's company, according to  
‘ each man's respective shares, as borne on  
‘ the ship's books.

‘ Secondly, That all plunder on board  
‘ each prize we take, shall be equally di-  
‘ vided among the ship's company, accord-  
‘ ing to each man's respective share, as a-  
‘ bove.

Thirdly,



‘ Thirdly, That gold rings found in any  
‘ place, except in a goldsmith’s shop, is  
‘ plunder; all arms, sea-books and instru-  
‘ ments, all cloathing and moveables, usu-  
‘ ally worn about prisoners (except womens  
‘ ear-rings, unwrought gold and silver, loose  
‘ diamonds, pearls and money) all plate in  
‘ use aboard ships, but not on shore (unless  
‘ about the persons of prisoners) is plunder;  
‘ all manner of cloaths ready made, found  
‘ on the upper deck, or between decks, be-  
‘ longing to the ship’s company and passen-  
‘ gers, is plunder also, except what is above  
‘ limited, and is in bundles or pieces not o-  
‘ pened in the country, that appears not for  
‘ the person’s use that owns the chest, but  
‘ designed for merchandize, which only shall  
‘ not be plunder; all manner of bedding, all  
‘ manner of necessaries, all buttons, buckles,  
‘ liquors and provisions, for our own expen-  
‘ ing and use, is plunder. It is also agreed,  
‘ that any sort of wrought silver or gold, cru-  
‘ cifixes, gold and silver watches, or any o-  
‘ ther moveables found about the prisoners,  
‘ or any wearing apparel of any kind, shall  
‘ be likewise plunder.

‘ Fourthly, That if any person on board  
‘ the ship do conceal any plunder, exceed-

A. D.  
1719.

‘ ing one piece of eight, twenty-four hours  
 ‘ after the capture of the prize, he shall be  
 ‘ severely punished, and loose his share of  
 ‘ that prize and plunder, one half thereof to  
 ‘ be given to the informer, and the other to  
 ‘ be equally divided among the ship’s compa-  
 ‘ ny. The same penalty to be inflicted for  
 ‘ being drunk in time of action, or disobey-  
 ‘ ing his superior officer’s command, or con-  
 ‘ cealing himself in the sea or land service,  
 ‘ except when any prize is taken by storm  
 ‘ or boarding. Then whatsoever is taken  
 ‘ shall be his own, as follows, *viz.* a sailor or  
 ‘ landman ten pound, an officer below the  
 ‘ carpenter twenty pound, a mate, gunner,  
 ‘ boatswain, and carpenter forty pound, a  
 ‘ lieutenant or master eighty pound, and the  
 ‘ captain a hundred pounds.

‘ Fifthly, That all plunder shall be ap-  
 ‘ praised and divided, as soon as possible after  
 ‘ the capture; also every person to be sworn and  
 ‘ searched, as soon as they come aboard, by such  
 ‘ persons as shall be appointed for that purpose.  
 ‘ The person or persons refusing, shall forfeit  
 ‘ their share of prize or plunder as above.

‘ Sixthly, In consideration that captain  
 ‘ Shelvocke, to make the ship’s company  
 easy,

' easy, has given the whole cabbin plunder  
' (which, in all probability, is the major part)  
' to be divided as aforesaid, we do volunta-  
' rily agree, that he shall have five per Cent  
' over and above his respective share, as a  
' consideration of what is his due of the  
' plunder aforesaid.

' Seventhly, That a reward of twenty dol-  
' lars shall be given to him that first sees a  
' prize of good value, or exceeding fifty tons  
' in burthen.'

This is an exact copy of the original letter  
and articles, which I have now by me. And,  
I dare say, no body will doubt of it. I had  
not troubled the reader with this, had I not  
thought it necessary to give him a more per-  
fect idea of some of our transactions afterwards.

This was a matter of weight, and required  
to be well considered of. On the one side, I  
had to deal with an obstinate ship's company,  
who persisted in having what they called  
their due and lawful rights, and would give  
ear to nothing that might be objected to  
them; and on the other side, if I endeavour-  
ed to make them easy according to their de-  
fire, I was obnoxious to the dissatisfaction of  
the Gentlemen Adventurers at home, who

A. D.

1719.

might have thought themselves wronged, and have thrown all the blame upon me, without giving themselves time to consider in what manner I was circumstanced ; but, at once vent themselves on me, who had it, by no means, in my power to prevent what followed, though I used all the artifices I was master of, to defeat this project. I found that most of the superior officers tacitly approved of these measures, and particularly Captain Hatley, who was on Captain Roger's expedition, and (as I was informed) was the chief person concerned in this affair. It is plain, that the observations in the letter were his, for he had been an officer on board the Dutchess. He said, he knew by woeful experience, how they were used on board the the Duke and Dutchess. That they were never paid one tenth of their due, and that it plainly appeared how a certain gentleman designed to treat them, by his bullying them, and endeavouring to force them from Gravesend, before they had received their river pay, and impress money. This he observed, was a thing never attempted before, as well as to be hurried to sea without any knowledge of their voyage. That he was very well assured, it was captain Clipperton's design to divide  
their

their shares in the country. By all this, I was given to understand, how he came to be such a favourite with the people, all at once.

A. D.

1719.

I conceive, that, in this case, where my chief officers were cold and indifferent, and did not think it for their interest, to afford me any of their assistance, all I could possibly do, was to interpose my authority, and if that failed, nothing remained for me to check them with, in their proceedings this way.

But the more I opposed them, the more they grew impatient and impetuous, and my delays served only to fix them the more firmly to their point. In short, they sent one Matthew Stewart to me, as their agent and manager, that he might shew me the power they had given him to act, for them, in that capacity. It was signed by the whole ship's company, excepting some of the chief officers, and was as follows :

A copy of the power of attorney and agency, made to Matthew Stewart, by the ship's company on board the Speedwell.

‘ Know all men by these presents, that we  
‘ under subscribers, officers, seamen and o-  
‘ thers, on board the Speedwell of London,

D 4

captain

A. D.  
1719.

‘ captain George Shelvocke, commander, for  
‘ certain good causes and considerations, us  
‘ hereunto moving, have, and do hereby  
‘ name, make, and in our stead and place,  
‘ put and constitute our trusty friend Matthew  
‘ Stewart, our true and lawful attorney and  
‘ agent, irrevocably for us, in our name, and  
‘ to our use, to ask, claim, demand, reco-  
‘ ver, and receive, from the above-named  
‘ captain George Shelvocke, or the owners  
‘ of the said ship, or whom else it may con-  
‘ cern, all and singular such wages, salaries,  
‘ prize-money, &c whatsoever, as now is,  
‘ or at any time, or times hereafter, shall be  
‘ due, payable, and belonging to us, for our  
‘ service on board the ship Speedwell, or any  
‘ prize or prizes taken by her; giving, and  
‘ hereby granting to our said agent (provided  
‘ he take orders from us from time to time,  
‘ as we shall appoint) all our authority and  
‘ lawful power in the premises for receiving,  
‘ recovering, and obtaining, compounding  
‘ and discharging the same, as fully and effec-  
‘ tually as we ourselves might or could do,  
‘ being personally present; and acquittances  
‘ or releases, or any other discharges in our  
‘ name, to make, seal and deliver; ratifying,  
‘ and hereby confirming all, and whatsoever  
‘ our

‘ our said agent shall lawfully do, or cause to  
‘ be done, in and about the premises, by  
‘ virtue of these presents. In witness where-  
‘ of, we have hereunto set our hands and  
‘ seals, the twenty-third of April, one thou-  
‘ sand, seven hundred and nineteen, and in  
‘ the fifth year of our sovereign lord GEORGE,  
‘ by the grace of God, of Great-Britain,  
‘ France and Ireland, King.

A. D.  
1719.

Having perused this, he told me, the peo-  
ple had sent him to beg the favour of an  
answer to their letter, and that they expected  
a favourable one, being resolved to have their  
share of what fortune should bless them with,  
before it came into the owners hands ; with  
this reserve, that they would always do justice  
to the gentlemen in England. I replied, that  
‘ I did not imagine they could or would en-  
‘ tertain a thought of doing any thing to  
‘ their disadvantage ;’ but, at the same time,  
made him as sensible as I could, of what pro-  
bable injury their demand might be to the ad-  
venturers at home, whose interest they seem-  
ed to have so much at heart. And therefore  
bad him take for answer, that ‘ I never  
‘ would consent to any alteration that might  
‘ bear the least likelihood of being prejudici-  
al

The ship's  
company send  
their agent for  
an answer to  
their letter.

A. D.

1719.

‘ al to the gentlemen adventurers. I farther  
 ‘ desired they would consider, that I, myself,  
 ‘ must be a very great sufferer by these their  
 ‘ proceedings and demands, not only in my  
 ‘ character, but in my fortune too, as I had  
 ‘ given very great security for behaving my-  
 ‘ self according to my instructions ; that,  
 ‘ for my part, I could not tell what might  
 ‘ be captain Clipperton’s intention ; that what  
 ‘ he might do, might be warrantable in him,  
 ‘ for ought I knew ; but that it was not in me,  
 ‘ and that, doubtless, they should fare as well  
 ‘ as his people. I desired therefore, they  
 ‘ would desist until we had joined the Success,  
 ‘ in the South Seas, and that then conform-  
 ‘ ing ourselves to what they had made a rule  
 ‘ in this case, we should be blameless.’ I  
 concluded with telling him, ‘ he had heard  
 ‘ my resolution and advice in this affair, and  
 ‘ that if he, and the rest of them, had but a  
 ‘ tenth part of the respect, and regard they  
 ‘ pretended to have for me, they would not  
 ‘ so much as think again of what they had  
 ‘ offered to me in their letter.’

The people in  
 a body muti-  
 nously desire  
 that the re-  
 quest in their  
 letter may be  
 complied with

But after some few days of murmuring and  
 uneasiness amongst themselves, and no work  
 going forward, the ship’s company came all  
 upon the quarter-deck to me, in a mutinous  
 manner



A. D.

1719.

manner, and desired to know what was my final resolution, as to the business they had proposed to me. They said I knew theirs, which was what they would stand by, telling me they knew how to provide for themselves, without running such certain hazards, for such uncertain gain. They clamoured in a most outrageous manner against Mr. G-----, who was our principal agent, and against one of the gentlemen adventurers, saying, they had been well informed what a paymaster he would make, if ever their fortunes should fall into his hands, with a number of scurrilous expressions which astonished me. In short, they were so deaf to any thing I could urge against them, and so very importunate with me to comply with them, by signing their articles, that, considering the prospect I had of meeting captain Clipperton in the South Seas, when they might be again reduced, and made subject to their first articles, or at least be made subject to the same restrictions with those under his command; and verily believing the consequence of my refusal in this particular, would be no less than their running away with the ship, and following the old gunner's scheme, or some other like it, whereby they might provide for themselves

as

A. D.

1719.

Myself and  
chief officers  
sign their arti-  
cles.

as they called it: Upon these considerations it was, that both myself, and all my chief officers, thought it would be best and most advisable, to sign their papers with them, rather than run the risque of their proceeding, when they had got out to sea, in any piratical manner. As soon as they had gained their point, they expressed great satisfaction at it, and promised me they would be always ready to hazard their lives in any undertaking I should think conducive to the ends we were fitted out for. However, upon the whole, though it may be called a desperate remedy, when I was not certain what might have been the consequence of it, it ought to be considered as applied to a desperate disease, and as the only means left to prevail with them to go on, at all, quietly with our expedition: for the most favourable conjecture that could have been made, if I had not complied with their request, was, that they would have certainly deserted, and have left me, with a few others, here to have ended our expedition in this port. I dare say, it would have been imputed to me as great imprudence, if I had not complied with them, when so many opportunities might have happened in the course of so long a voyage, to oblige the ship's company

company to submit to their first agreement with the gentlemen adventurers.

A. D.  
1719.

If the reader thinks I have dwelt too long on the particulars of this affair, I ask pardon for trespassing too much upon his patience. But I promise myself a ready forgiveness, when I assure him I have been the more exact on this head, not only as I thought it worthy of being fully related, for the sake of others who may go hereafter on the like expeditions, but also to vindicate myself from an aspersions that has been thrown upon me, as if myself had been the promoter of this change; which, I should hope, would appear to be absurd to any one who will give himself but a moment to reflect on it; for who can think that a person in command, would not exert his power to the utmost, to maintain himself in it, when both his honour and fortune were, in a manner, at stake.

But to go on with our voyage, on Monday, August the third, there came in here, the St. Francisco Xavier, a Portugueze man of war, of forty guns and three hundred men, from Lisbon, bound to Macao in China, commanded by Captain la Riviere, a Frenchman. I made no doubt but that Captain Hatley's affair would be reported to this Gentleman

A. D.  
1719.

tleman by some of the inhabitants, and, therefore, I told Hatley, that I expected he would go and vindicate himself to the Portuguese Captain, to prevent any disturbances that might arise, by any account of his mismanagement on board the Portuguese, which we met at sea. To which he readily replying he would, I gave him an opportunity of doing it, by sending him with a compliment to Monsieur la Riviere.

Send captain Hatley with a compliment to the Portuguese Captain.

Hatley, at his return, told me, the Captain did not mention any thing of it to him, until he spoke of it himself, and that the Portuguese Captain told him, he had heard something of it, and desired to know what the ship was. Hatley said he described her as well as he could, and informed him of every thing he had had out of her. Upon which, Monsieur la Riviere wished he had met with her, and seemed to be angry with him for thinking he could harbour any ill thought of a gentleman who served under such a commission, and bound on a voyage, which, to his knowledge, could hardly fail of answering the largest expectations, and that with honour and reputation. He told him, ' It was very likely he might receive ' a gratuity from the master of the ship, to ' prevent

' prevent his being troublesome: But that his  
 ' Captain's coming immediately into a port  
 ' of his own nation, was a convincing de-  
 ' monstration to him (besides the meanness  
 ' of the story) that there could be no pub-  
 ' lick, or general base design, and that he  
 ' was far from mistrusting there could have  
 ' been any private one; and desired him to  
 ' give his humble service to me, and tell me  
 ' that he had a great deal of honour and re-  
 ' spect for me, and begged I would let him  
 ' have the conveniences I had on shore  
 ' (when I had done with them) if the French  
 ' Captain had not pre-engaged me.'

A. D.

1719.

Thursday, August the sixth, three of my <sup>Three of</sup>  
 men deserted, and hearing they were detain- <sup>my men de-</sup>  
 ed by Monsieur Dumain, I sent on board of <sup>fert.</sup>  
 his ship to demand them, but they denied  
 that they had them. Then understanding  
 that they had been seen at our tents, I sent  
 one of the mates, in the pinnace, to go after <sup>Send the</sup>  
 them, with orders to go no farther than the <sup>pinnace in</sup>  
 tents, but to return without loss of time; <sup>quest of them</sup>  
 because I was heaving up my anchor, with <sup>Heave up</sup>  
 design to fall below the road that night, that <sup>our anchor</sup>  
 I might be in the greater readiness for sailing <sup>and fall down</sup>  
 the next morning. But the mate, and those <sup>the road.</sup>  
 with him, missing those deserters at the place  
 they

A. D.  
1719.

they were sent to, they went, before they returned on board, up to the Portuguese plantations, which were two leagues farther. It being towards midnight, the inhabitants took the alarm, as if it had been Hatley, who was come to take his leave of them, in the manner he had threatened. They however, suffered our men to go up to their place of dwelling, to search for those they were in quest of; but upon finding a different reception from what they had been used to meet withal, they suspected some ill intent against them, and therefore made the best of their way back to their boat again. In the mean time, some of the

Three of the  
pinnacle's crew  
wounded by  
an ambuscade  
of the Portuguese.

Portuguese had planted themselves in ambuscade, to destroy them as they returned again to the water-side. No sooner had my people got into the boat, than they heard them rushing from out of the woods, crying, ' Kill the dogs, kill all the English dogs.' This outcry was instantly followed by a volley of small arms, which wounded three of my men, two through the thigh, and another through the arm. They again discharged several times at the boat, as she was going off, but did no farther damage. The wounded sustained a great loss of blood, by being so long before they

they could get on board of us again, for they were above three leagues distant from the ship: but our surgeon was a good one, and he performed the several cures in less time, and with better success, than could have been hoped for. This unlucky accident obliged me to weigh again the next morning, and return into the road; to try what could be done to punish those who had been concerned in this barbarity. To this purpose, I sent a letter of complaint, by Hatley, to the captain of the Portuguese man of war in the harbour: but Hatley at his entrance into the ship, was furiously assaulted by Emanuel Mansa (the captain of the island) crying out, this was the man who had committed so many insolencies towards them, and that this was he who had burnt one of their houses, and had made it a common practice to abuse and affront him with the opprobrious name of cuckold. Upon this exclamation, the ship's company sided with Mansa, and fell upon Hatley, and would certainly have used both him and his boat's crew very severely had not the captain and his officers, with much difficulty, prevented it; for the Portuguese seamen were exasperated

A. D.

1719.

Return again the next morning into the road with my ship.

And send a letter of complaint to the captain of the Portuguese man of war.

Hatley who carried the letter, in great danger of his life among the Portuguese ship's company

E

to

A. D.  
1719.

to that height, that it is more than likely they would have murdered him, had they not been timely hindered.

This is the account which he delivered to me at his return from on board this Portuguese ship, from the captain of whom I received a very obliging letter (in answer to mine by Hatley) which was, word for word, in broken English as follows.

Dated on board the St Francis  
Xavier in the road of Santa  
Catalina, the 16th of Au-  
gust, N. S. 1719.

SIR,

I Have received your's agreeable, and no-  
thing is more sorrowful to me in the  
world, than to hear your men are wound-  
ed. I hope you know that those people  
are without knowing King or Prince, and  
though they have one, they don't shew  
him the honour according as they should. I  
am very sorry not to give you justice as I  
should desire, being out of my power, you  
may do whatsoever you may judge to it.  
I would in my particular buy the health of  
your men, and I pray to consider that those  
people



‘ people are wild, and hidden in the woods,  
‘ if you should seek for revenge upon them.  
‘ It would risk your men to a very butchery,  
‘ and without any fruit. I will contribute  
‘ all in my power to help you to have the  
‘ satisfaction of this, and at the same time I  
‘ will send an express as I shall to Rio Ja-  
‘ neiro to the Governor, and acquaint him,  
‘ as well as the court of Portugal, of what  
‘ it hath past, and at the same time of the  
‘ tyranny your men have received.

A. D.  
1719.

I am

your most dutiful

and obedient servant

LA RIVIERE.

The evening after the receipt of this letter, I myself go  
I went on board of the Portugueze, where on board the  
I was treated with abundance of complai- Portugueze  
-ship.  
fance. The captain asked my pardon for the  
ill usage my officer had met with ; but with-  
al gave me to understand, there could be no  
greater provocation to the people of that na-

A. D.  
1719.

tion, than that which Hatley was accused of by Manfa. That his ship's company had got Hatley amongst them before he knew any thing of the matter, and that he was obliged to call his priest to his assistance, before he could get him out of their hands, and in a very handsom manner, touched upon Hatley's story. I made no long stay on board of hem, and at my departure was saluted after their manner, with seven *Vive el Reyes*, and

The Portuguese captain comes on board my ship.

eleven guns. The next morning, Monsieur la Riviere came on board of me, with his chief officers, to breakfast with me, and fall a tide's work down the harbour with us. At his going away, I could give him but three guns, having only four mounted. The rest were struck down into the Hold, to ease the ship, and make her stiff when we came to sea. We were now ready to depart, and I had made the ship perfectly fit to go through the tempestuous navigation we were to expect, in sailing to the Southward. I had made our stern as firm as possible, by covering it entirely with thick plank, and had only left two small skuttles, to give light into the great cabin. I also furnished myself with plank, wherewith to build an awning, but I chose rather to set it up at sea, than make a longer stay

stay

stay here. I also added <sup>very</sup> considerably to our stock of provisions, and did not make the least expenditure of our European stores, liquors excepted. My people had lived entirely upon fresh provisions, during all the time we were at this island. I purchased twenty-one head of black cattle, some at four dollars each, and others at eight; several hogs, at four dollars each, and two hundred of large salted drum-fish, at ten dollars *per* hundred. I moreover purchased one hundred and fifty bushels of *Farina de Pao*, which is the flower of the Cassader root, and is somewhat in the nature of our oatmeal. It is very hearty eating, and is prepared for the Mess with very little trouble. It need only be thrown into boiling water, and makes a Burgou immediately. To all this I added a very necessary article, which was, a good stock of tobacco.

Thus provided with every thing necessary for the ship and the people, we, on the eighth of August, sailed from St. Catherine's, to my great satisfaction, it being what I had long despaired of ever being able to bring to pass, because of what I had long observed in the temper and disposition of my ship's company.

A. D.  
1719.

Here we added considerably to our stock of provisions.

A. D.

1719.

*Account of the island of St. Catherine's.*

**M**onsieur Frezier, though he has otherwise given a very good account of this island, has been guilty of taking no notice of an island lying between the island of Gall, and the Northernmost point of St. Catherine's, and has not well observed a reef of rocks running almost two-thirds across the channel between the island of Gall and the main continent of Brasil. The first of these mistakes surprized us very much, for as we stood through the forementioned channel in the night, we took the island, he has omitted, to be the Northernmost part of St. Catherine's; but having passed it, and found an opening to the sea, with only an high island about two miles in circumference, we apprehended ourselves to be in the wrong place, and therefore came to an anchor again immediately, but in the morning we plainly perceived Monsieur Frezier's omission.

Directions  
for the anchorage.

In order to arrive at the anchoring place, you must continue to sail in the channel, between St. Catherine's and the continent, till you come within, or near to two small islands, which have as yet had no name given them.

Over-

Over-against the Northermost of these is the watering-place on St. Catherine's, near to the entrance of a small salt water creek, opposite to which you may come to, in six or seven fathom water, very safely, the bottom being a fine grey sand.

The island of St. Catherine's itself, is about eight leagues and a half in length, but in breadth it no where exceeds two leagues; and the channel between it and the continent is so narrow in one part, as not to be much above a quarter of a mile in breadth. The whole island is all over covered with inaccessible woods, so that excepting the plantations, and places of habitation, there is not a clear spot upon it. The least island about it is, with the same luxuriancy, overspread with a great variety of trees and undergrowth of brambles and thorns which deny all access; and the main continent of Brasil itself, in this part, appears to be one vast, continued wilderness.

The sassafras, so much esteemed in Europe, is so common there, that we laid in a good quantity of it, instead of other wood, for firing. They have here a great quantity of oranges, both sweet and sour; lemons, citrons, limes, banana's, palm-cabbage, melons of all sorts,

Several forts  
of fruit.

A<sup>nd</sup>. and potatoes. They have here too the sugar  
1719 cane, very large and good, but they make  
little or no use of it, for want of utensils; so  
that the little moloffus and rum they have,  
they sell very dear.

Game.

As to game, there is hardly any to be had,  
although the woods are full of parrots, which  
are good eating, and are always seen to fly by  
pairs, notwithstanding there may be some  
hundreds of them in a flock. They have Mac-  
caws, cockatoes, plovers, and a great diversity  
of other birds of curious colours and peculiar  
shapes, and particularly, a sort of bird somewhat  
bigger than a thrush, with a spur in the joint  
of each wing. The flamingoes are very of-  
ten seen here in great numbers, they are of a  
fine and rich scarlet. They appear extremely  
beautiful when on wing. They are about the  
size of the heron, and in general, may be  
said to be not unlike them in shape.

Several sorts  
of fish.

It is quite otherwise with the fishery; for  
as they have a great abundance of several sorts  
of good fish, so they have almost every where  
the best conveniencies for hauling the seine.  
All their bays and creeks are well stocked with  
mulletts, large rays, grunters, cavallies, and  
drum-fish, so called from the noise they make,  
and by which they are followed into shoal-

water

A. D.

1719.

water, and taken. Some of these Drum-fish weigh twenty or thirty pounds a piece. Their scales are large and strong, and almost as big as a crown piece. The Portuguese call them Meroes. If you go up three or four miles into the salt-water creek, which I have before mentioned to be near the watering place, you may find each rock and stone, and even the roots of the mangrove trees, afford a delicious sort of small green oysters. Among the rocks, by the sea-side, you find what is called the sea-egg; in its outward form, it nearly resembles a *dock-burr*; excepting that it is generally three or four times as big, and of a sea-green or deep purple colour; but in the inside it is divided in partitions like an orange, each partition containing a yellow substance, which is eaten raw, and, in my opinion, exceeds all the shell-fish I ever tasted; they have prawns of an extraordinary size, and in our nets we sometimes caught the sea-horse, described by monsieur Frezier, in his relation of this place.

On the savannas of Arezitiba, on the continent, over-against the southernmost point of St. Catherine's, they have great numbers of black cattle, some of which we were supplied with from thence, and which we bought at a reasonable price.

Take

A. D.

1719.

Inhabitants.

Sadly pester'd  
with tygers.

Take the character of the Portugueze of this island from the Portugueze captain's letter; for it is certain they are a parcel of Bandidi, which come for refuge hither from the neighbouring, and more strictly governed colonies of Brasil. Emanuel Manfa, who was what they called captain of the island, was still their chief as much as in Frezier's time. However, for my part, I cannot but do them the justice to say, that they traded with me very honestly, and were very civil to every one but to those who gave them the gross affronts, I have already mentioned. They enjoy the the blessings of a fertile country and a wholsom air, and stand in need of no necessities except cloathing. They have fire-arms sufficient for their use, and indeed they have need of them very often, for they are sadly troubled with tygers. But though use has made them easy under that inconvenience, yet in their houses they are obliged to keep a great many dogs, to defend them from those ravenous creatures, who oftentimes make great havock among them. I have been told, a tyger has killed eight or ten dogs in a night; but if it be day-light, the tyger seldom escapes them; for he then affords the inhabitants a kind of diversion, and

an



A. D.

1719.

an opportunity to destroy him effectually; in short, nothing is more common than to see the prints of tygers paws upon the sandy beach. As to their fine dwelling-houses mentioned by Monsieur Frezier, we could none of us ever see any of them; nor have they any place worthy the name of a town, nor any fortification, of any kind, excepting the woods, which to them is a sure retreat and security against any enemy that might venture to attack them. As to the Indians of this part, I cannot say much of them, having never seen above two or three of them, while we remained at this island.

The VOYAGE continued from *St. Catherine's*.

Upon Sunday, the ninth of August, we took our departure from the Northermost point of St. Catherines, in the latitude of twenty-seven degrees, twenty minutes South, the difference of longitude, fifty degrees West from the Lizard.

Wednesday, August the nineteenth, at six in the evening, Mr La Port, my third lieutenant, broke his leg, by a slide on the deck. From the time we left St. Catherines, till now, we had for the most part squally weather. At noon, our latitude, by observation, was thirty-six degrees twenty-five minutes South, our meridian

A. D.  
1719.

ridian distance a hundred and forty-two miles West from St. Catherines. I kept the lead going all along the coast of Patagonia, otherwise called the Desert-Coast; and I presume it will not be amiss to insert the following account of the depths and nature of the ground as follows, *viz.*

Soundings  
and nature of  
the ground on  
the coast of  
Paragonia.

In latitude of thirty-six degrees forty-two minutes South, we had soundings in ninety fathom.

In thirty-six degrees thirty-four minutes South, soundings in sixty and seventy fathom grey sand

In forty degrees twenty-two minutes South, soundings in sixty-eight fathom, grey and black sand.

In forty degrees twenty-one minutes South soundings in eighty-five fathom, the same ground as before. In this latitude we saw vast quantities of large sea-weeds.

In latitude forty-one degrees two minutes South, soundings in ninety-five fathom, grey and black sand.

In forty-four degrees fifty-eight minutes South, soundings from sixty-five to seventy fathom, the same.

In forty-five degrees sixteen minutes South, soundings in sixty-three fathom, rocky.

In

In forty-five degrees twenty-six minutes South, soundings from sixty-two to seventy fathom, the same.

A. D.  
1719.

In forty-five degrees forty-two minutes South, soundings and ground the same.

In forty-seven degrees eighteen minutes South, soundings from sixty-two to seventy fathom, grey and black sand.

From the latitude of forty-nine degrees thirty-four minutes South, to the latitude of fifty-one degrees ten minutes South, we had soundings from fifty-five to sixty fathoms, black sand and yellow gravel.

I found the soundings to be very regular, and though I cannot be certain of our exact distance from the land, at any particular times of our founding, yet I dare say we were never nearer than thirty, or farther than forty leagues distant from the land. From the latitude of forty degrees, to the latitude of fifty-two degrees thirty minutes, we had sight of continual shoals of seals and penguins, and were constantly attended by Pintado birds. These are of about the bigness of a pidgeon, and the French call them Damiers; because their feathers being black and white, are disposed in such a manner, as to make their backs and wings appear chec-

See vast  
shoals of seals  
and penguins.

And great  
numbers of  
Pintado birds  
and Albitros.

quered

In

A. D.

1719.

quered like a draught board. These were accompanied by Albitrosses, the largest sort of sea-fowl we know of, some of them extending their wings to the width of twelve or thirteen feet.

Incom-  
moded by the  
great quanti-  
ties of sea-  
weed.

Whilst we had the river of Plate open, the sea thereabouts was covered with prodigious quantities of large sea-weed, which often incommoded us. It was impossible for us to avoid running into the midst of vast shoals of it. It was very troublesome to get clear of it again, whenever this happened, and it always made us lose some of our way. But as we went more to the Southward, this inconvenience left us.

After this we had, on the surface of the water, abundance of things appearing like white snakes. We took some of them up, but could not perceive there was any life in them, nor were they formed into any shape resembling any kind of animal, they being only, in form, a long cylinder of a white sort of a jelly. I might have observed that as we advanced to the Southward, my people's stomachs increased with the sharpness of the air to that degree, that the allowance which the government gives in the navy, was not sufficient to satisfy their hunger. Some of my  
officers

A. D.

1719.

officers, in particular, were very angry they could not have their bellies full, or at least a larger allowance than the common people.

Mr. Betagh, my captain of marines, who had been formerly a purser of a man of war, and a man whom I had a great regard for, was the champion for an addition of allowance at my table; for he told me he had orders from the adventurers to eat with me; and what was my

*Betagh the captain of marines, grows troublesome because I would not enlarge the allowance at my table.*

table, if I did not eat better than the cook? To this I answered, that he knew I was not allowed an ounce of fresh provisions to sea with me, and that he could have no reason to complain, having all along fared as well as myself, without any charge to him. But notwithstanding all I could say, this gentleman did not think it necessary to use any ceremony at such a table, and would sometimes take the greatest part of what we had, upon his own plate; so that I found myself obliged to divide the allowance of my table into equal shares, and every one had his share by lot. Upon this, Mr. Betagh used his endeavours to persuade the people not to starve themselves, as he called it, and he gained his point so far, that, in a very

*Through Betagh's means obliged to give an extraordinary allowance of provisions.*

little while after, I was forced to give them an extraordinary meal, every day, either of farina or calavances, which at once made a con-

siderable

A. D.  
1719.

considerable consumption both of our water, and fewel. Betagh could not stop here, but urged by his intemperance, and finding me unwilling to squander away our provisions, without knowing when or where we might get any more, he at length had the insolence to tell me publickly, that the voyage should be short with me, which he often repeated. I should have had reason to fear it, had he been capable of commanding; for I had been informed he was a Cape-of-Good-Hope-man.

Betagh by his insolence, obliges me to expel him the great cabin, and order him under confinement.

But, however, for his punishment, I excluded him both from my mess, and the great cabin. Upon this, captain Betagh, finding I was in earnest with him, and fearing some heavy punishment might befall him for his mutinous behaviour, sent me the following letter to ask my pardon for what he had done.

September 18, 1719.

SIR,

I Shall not here trouble you with many arguments to extenuate the crime I stand charged with, which were to put the delinquent upon a footing with the injured person.

I

A. D.

1719.

‘ I therefore own, and am sorry, that pas-  
 ‘ sion and the distress I had long laboured  
 ‘ under of your ill will, have so far trans-  
 ‘ ported me, as to give you such language,  
 ‘ as is no ways justifiable from any officer to  
 ‘ his commander. I heartily ask your par-  
 ‘ don for it, promising that I will use my  
 ‘ best endeavours never to transgress in the  
 ‘ same manner. But were it permitted me  
 ‘ to expostulate any thing herein, it would  
 ‘ be to put you in mind that I fear you are  
 ‘ too much prepossessed in my disfavour;  
 ‘ for you gave me your word at St. Cathe-  
 ‘ rines, that no omission or transgression then  
 ‘ passed and over, should ever more be ob-  
 ‘ jected to any person therein concerned.  
 ‘ And yet my misfortune is such, that the  
 ‘ words I spake seven or eight months ago,  
 ‘ were made the occasion of this business,  
 ‘ though I am sure, with other persons, and  
 ‘ on any other score, you would not violate  
 ‘ your promise. Next, I shall beg leave to  
 ‘ assure you, I never entertained any thoughts  
 ‘ of ever becoming a party-man, for it is my  
 ‘ aversion; and I am almost assured, that  
 ‘ were I so inclined (as I never shall) I should  
 ‘ not find one to join me; for I find every  
 ‘ one so well satisfied, especially since the

F

‘ late



A. D. ' late amendment to the distribution of prize  
 1719. ' and plunder money, and that the worst or  
 ' most fatiguing part of our voyage is almost  
 ' past, that each, and every of them is well  
 ' enough pleased with the prospect they have  
 ' in hand. I am with great respect,

S I R,

your most humble

and most obedient servant

WILLIAM BETAGH.

Upon this  
 letter Betagh  
 is set at liber-  
 ty.

It may appear plain enough to any one who reads the foregoing letter, that this was not the first offence he had been guilty of, and in fact it was not. The person who delivered this letter to me, told me, that captain Betagh was so far from thinking the acknowledgement, in his letter, sufficient to merit my favour, that he begged I would give him an opportunity of confessing his crimes openly, which he would do in such a manner, as he hoped would move me to pardon him. Upon which I again restored him  
 in



in a handsomer manner than he afterwards deserved, as will appear by the sequel.

A. D.

1719.

But now to resume the thread of our voyage, I must inform the reader, that between St. Catherine's and the river of Plate it is but an indifferent coast. For which reason I kept a good offing, till I came to the Southward of Cape St. Anthony, where I hauled into foundings, as has been said before. There is another thing worth our observation, and that is, that the whales, grampusses, and other fish of a monstrous bulk, are in such numbers on the coast of Patagonia, that they were very often offensive to us. They would come sometimes so close to us, as almost to stifle us with their stench when they blew, and would lie so near us, that I have frequently thought it impossible to escape striking upon them on every fend of the sea. I am a stranger to the Greenland fishery, therefore cannot say why a trade for blubber, at least, might not be carried on here. I may venture to affirm, it is a safer navigation, and I am apt to believe here is a greater certainty of success in making up a cargoe.

Great numbers of whales &amp;c.

Saturday, September the nineteenth, I remembering to have heard of some shoals in

A. D. 1719. the latitude of fifty degrees, thirty minutes South, and having no draught that described this coast (for captain Clipperton, who was supplied with every thing necessary, of that kind, for both ships, did not think fit to let me have any) and judging that I was not above twenty leagues from the land, I stood right in, the greatest part of the day, with intent to strike ground upon these shoals, but did not come into less than fifty-five fathom; therefore at night I altered my course along shore again. About midnight I perceived the water to be discoloured all at once, and upon heaving the lead, we found ourselves in twenty-six fathom of depth; this done, I stood off again to sea, but we did not deepen our water in the running of five leagues. At six the next morning we had thirty fathom, but had no sight of land, though some were of opinion they had, which I did not depend upon. This bank must lie very near the entrance of the straits of Magellan. On this bank, or shoal, we saw great numbers of blubbers appearing, like the tops of umbrellas, curiously striped and streaked with all sorts of colours. They were a species entirely different from any I had ever seen, of the kind, before.

From

A. D.

1719

From hence I shaped my course for the straits of le Mair, and as we approached the coasts of Terra del Fuego, we met with very foggy weather. I had a fine opportunity of going through the straits of Magellan; but captain Clipperton, in his scheme, pretended, out of the abundance of his judgment, and experience, that the straits of Le Mair would be the best navigation for us at this time, though he himself passed thro' the straits of Magellan. From this I might have conjectured that he who never was fond of having a consort with him, designed to make use of this as a likely expedient to separate himself from us to some purpose; and it will be seen in its proper place, that he was a man who would do any thing rather than not follow his own way of thinking, though ever so dishonest or inhuman.

September the thirteenth, the fog clearing up, we saw some mountains of a stupendous height on Terra del Fuego, entirely covered with snow. The nearest point of land to us was at least eight leagues distant, bearing South West, but before we could make any farther discovery of this shore, the mist returned and made us stand off again for some time, and then bring to. At four the next morning I

Arrival on  
the coast of  
Terra del Fu  
1719

A. D.  
1719.

made an easy sail to the Southeastward, and at day-light it proved very clear; when I found I had fallen in with the land about five leagues to the Northwestward of the straits of Le Mair. We had now a full, but melancholy prospect of the most desolate country, to all appearance, that can be conceived or imagined, seeming to be no other than continued ridges and chains of mountains, one within another, perpetually buried in snow. Towards noon we were becalmed, within three leagues of the mountains called the Three Brothers, so named from their equal height, near resemblance, and proximity to one another; the Westernmost of them bearing South by West, and cape St. Vincent East by South, distant two leagues. Each of these three mountains rises gradually with an even surface to the Northwestward, and they then drop almost perpendicularly on the foot of each other, and form three bluff heads. Thus they appear at a distance, which caused Monsieur Frezier to tell us, in his description of this part, that they are contiguous. But I was near enough to see that the two Westernmost of them are divided by a large river, or very deep bay, where, perhaps, a ship might find good shelter on any emergent occasion.

A. D.

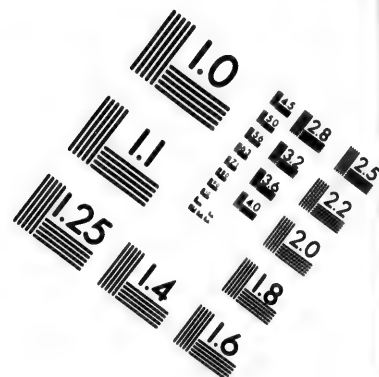
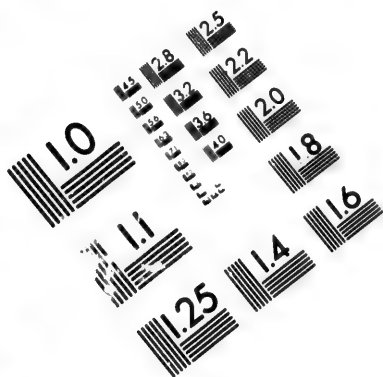
1719.

caſion. Theſe mountains were free from ſnow towards the ſea, and appear no other than rocky precipices. They are a very obvious mark to inform all ſhipping which come this way, that they are near the mouth of the ſtraits of Le Mair. But there is another thing which makes them the more remarkable, and that is a ſlender peaked mountain, appearing behind them, like a column of ſnow, much ſuperior in height to the reſt of the land about it. This column, if it may be ſo called, though ſituated ſo far up in the country, looks as if it was cloſe behind the Three Brothers, when you are at the forementioned bearings. It may be farther known, by leaning its head in a ſurprizing manner to the South eaſtward. We ſaw it at ſeveral bearings, but it keeps to its ſhape and ſeeming diſtance, and one would have almoſt thought it followed us as we rounded Cape St. Vincent, to go into the ſtraits, which are about three leagues to the South-eaſtward of the Three Brothers.

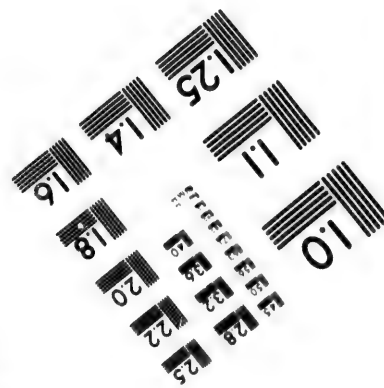
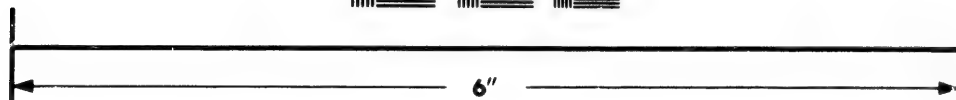
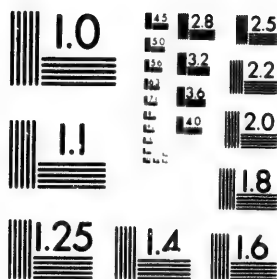
Before we came on the coaſt of Terra del Fuego, we had not been ſenſible of any helps or hindrances, by currents, from the time that we had got to the Southward of the river of Plate; but this afternoon we were hurried with incredible rapidity into the

Paſſage thro'  
the ſtraits  
of Le Mair.





# IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

28  
25  
22  
20  
18

10  
01



A. D.

1719.

straits, and just as we had gained somewhat more than the mid-passage, the tide slackened upon us. We then founded, and had but twenty-seven fathom of depth, with a rocky bottom. At the same time, I took an opportunity to make what observations I could of the straits themselves. We had a clear view of Staten land, which yields a most uncomfortable landscape, of a surprizing height, covered with snow to the very wash of the sea, and looks more like huge white clouds, than firm land. These straits seem to answer very well to Monsieur Frezier's map of them, being about seven leagues through, six leagues wide, and lie almost North and South. But in the midst of these observations, the northern tide came rushing upon us with a violence equal to that of the tide which had brought us in, and to our great astonishment, drove us out of the straits again at a great and extraordinary rate, notwithstanding we had a fresh and fair gale with us at North West, and when at the same time we ran at the rate of six knots by our log, so that I cannot judge this tide can run less than ten knots in an hour. In short, we were quite carried out of these straits again in about an hours time. Upon the shifting  
of

A. D.

1719.

of this tide to windward, there arose such a short, and while it lasted, so hollow a sea, and so lofty withal, that we alternately dipped our bowsprit end and poop lanthorns into the water. Our ship laboured in the most violent and most shocking manner, and became insensible of the guidance of her helm; but at midnight the tide shifted, and we put through the Straits, steering South with a brisk gale at North West, without seeing the land, distinctly on either side, and in the morning had a very good offing to the Southward.

After we had got well to sea, we unstocked our anchors, and brought them aft, and got in our spritsail yard to ease our bows, and make every thing as snug as possible. We had found it very cold, before we came this length, but now we began to feel the extreme of it. The bleak westerly winds of themselves, would have been sufficiently piercing, but they were always attended with drifts either of snow or fleet, which continually beating on our sails, and rigging, had cased the masts, and every rope with ice, and had, in a manner, rendered our sails useless to us. So much were we accustomed to the most severe storms, that we used to think it tolerable weather, if we could

Meet with  
very cold  
stormy weather.

A. D.  
1719.

could but bear a reefed mainsail ; for it was common with us to be, two or three days together, lying to under bare poles, exposed all the while, to the assaults of prodigious seas, much larger than any I had ever observed before. Now we began to be thoroughly sensible of the benefit of our awning, and, indeed, we could scarce have lived without it. The winds reigning thus tempestuously, without intermission, in the western board, we had stretched away into the latitude of sixty-one degrees, thirty minutes of Southern latitude. With all this, we had the misfortune of having continual misty weather, which suggested to us a continual dread of falling foul of islands of ice : but, thank God, we escaped that danger, though we had many alarms at the sight of fog-banks, and other false appearances. Notwithstanding we had the days of a great length, yet it was very seldom we could get a sight of the sun ; so that we had but one observation of the variation in all this passage, which was in the latitude of sixty degrees, thirty-seven minutes South, five degrees to the Westward of the straits of Le Mair, by our computation, where we found it to be twenty-two degrees, six minutes to the North Eastward.

Thursday

A. D.

1719.

Thursday, October the first, at seven in the evening, as we were furling the main-sail, one William Camell cried out, that his hands were so benumbed, he could not hold himself; but before those who were next to him, could lay hold of him, he fell into the sea, and the ship making very fresh way, and the sea running very high, we lost sight of him before we could bring to.

The cold is certainly more insupportable in these, than in the same latitudes to the Northward; for though we were pretty much advanced in the summer season, and had the days very long, we were nevertheless subject to continual squalls of sleet, snow and rain, and the heavens were perpetually hidden from us, by heavy and dismal clouds. In short, one would imagine it impossible that any thing living could subsist in so rigid a climate, and indeed, we all observed, that we had not had the sight of one fish, of any kind, since we were come to the Southward of the straits of Le Mair; nor of one sea-bird, excepting a disconsolate black Albitrofs, who accompanied us for several days, and hovered about us as if he had lost himself, till Hatley (my second captain) concluding, in a gloomy fit, that the company of this melancholy bird brought

A. D.  
1719.

brought us ill luck ; resolved to destroy him, in hopes we might then have better weather, and more favourable winds than we had hitherto had to deal with in these remote tempestuous seas. I must own the navigation here is truly melancholy, and it was the more so to us, who were a single ship, and by ourselves in this vast and dreadful solitude ; whereas a companion would have mixed some cheerfulness with the thoughts of being in so distant a part of the world, exposed to such dangers, and, as it were, separated from the rest of mankind. The very thoughts of the possibility of losing our masts, by the violence of such very stormy weather as we had had, were enough to cast a damp upon the clearest spirits ; but the hopes of enjoying a large repose in the Pacific Sea, on the coast of Peru, lightened our cares, and gave us some small relief.

Carry away  
our fore-top-  
mast.

Thursday, October the twenty-second, at eight at night, we carried away our fore-top-mast, and rigged another next morning. We crept, by very slow degrees, after we had ventured to tack and stand to the Northward, in hopes to weather our way into the great South Seas ; and indeed it may be averred, that from the time we passed the straits of

Le

Le Mair, till we had the first sight of the coast of Chili, we had been continually distressed by the winds, and discouraged by the weather.

A. D.

1719.

On Saturday, November the fourteenth at noon, we saw the coast of Chili, the North-<sup>Arrive in sight of the coast of Chili.</sup>ermost part in sight, bearing North East by East, and the Southermost, South East by South, distance ten leagues, latitude by observation forty-seven degrees, twenty-eight minutes South.

Having now overcome the most hazardous part of our navigation, and being arrived on the confines of the Spanish settlements on the coast of Chili, it behoved us to act with all the precaution necessary to prevent our being discovered by the enemy. Our supernumerary allowance of provisions, as before mentioned, had wasted our water and wood in such a manner, that instead of proceeding directly along the coast to the Northward; we found ourselves under an absolute necessity to think of some means, by which we might get a recruit of wood and water, and dared not presume to go much farther. till we had supplied ourselves therewith. We had but seven butts of water remaining, and those lying in such a manner, that half the hold must

Le

A D. must have been unstowed to get at them,  
 1719 and a much less proportion of wood. Our  
 circumstances being as here represented, I  
 thought it would be best for us to go first to  
 Narborough's island. We accordingly directed  
 our course to that place; and on Thursday, the  
 nineteenth of November, at eight in the  
 morning, we saw land, and at noon, the bo-  
 dy of Narborough's island bore North East  
 of us, distant three leagues. At the same  
 time our latitude by observation was forty-  
 four degrees, forty-three minutes South. Va-  
 riation by amplitude was eight degrees, fifty  
 minutes East.

Arrival at  
 Narborough's  
 island.

Saturday, November the twenty-first, at seven  
 in the morning, we had soundings in twenty-  
 eight fathom, of fine grey and black sand.  
 But here we found a very wild road, which  
 could not be deemed safe for us, in the unset-  
 tled weather, which we had had the experience  
 of, in this climate. But being, however,  
 willing to try what could possibly be done,  
 at nine the same morning, I steered East half  
 North, for the river of St. Domingo, which  
 empties itself from that part of the continent  
 which is opposite to Narborough's island. In  
 this river, I imagined, we might wood and  
 water, and clean our ship undiscovered, there  
 being

Attempt to  
 enter the river  
 of St. Domin-  
 go.

A. D.

1719.

being no appearance of inhabitants thereabouts. As we came in with the main-land, we had regular soundings from twenty-eight to twenty fathom ; but as soon as we had advanced a little into the entrance of the river, the water shoaled away from eighteen to fifteen, twelve, ten, nine, seven, six, five, four and a half fathoms, as fast as the man could heave the lead. Alarmed at this, and dreading an accident in so forlorn a place, I gave over the attempt, and immediately stood out to sea again, As we ranged along the shore, in going in, and returning out of this river, we rounded several bays, which seemed to be very commodious, but they were all foul at bottom. The day following, we had windy, rainy, thick weather, which blew us away to the Northward of this part of the coast.

It was a great misfortune to us, that we could not reach the island of Juan Fernandez, in the latitude of thirty-three degrees, thirty minutes South, without stopping at any other place. But our tedious passage, and the extraordinary consumption of our provisions, had not only reduced us to an extreme shortness of water and wood, but of all kinds of dry provisions also, which we were all but too sensible of. So that I was really obliged, in  
common



A. D.  
1719.

common discretion, to think of some place, where we might not only wood and water, but also get, if we could, a fresh supply of dry provisions. In this situation, and surrounded with doubts and apprehensions that we should be obliged to advance too far on these coasts of Chili and Peru, without a competent stock of provisions to keep the sea with, one Joseph de la Fontaine, a Frenchman, assured me, That if I would go to the island of Chiloe, which was, at that time, a little to the Northward of us, there was no place, for our purpose, like it, in all the South Seas, and, that to his knowledge (for he had been there) we could not fail of supplying ourselves, with what we so much wanted, in what measure I pleased; that the towns of Chacao and Calibuco, the first on the island itself, and the second on the continent, were rich places; that the former was the usual place of residence of the governor, and that at the latter there was a wealthy college of Jesuits; and that there were considerable magazines kept up, which were always well stocked with provisions of all kinds. At the same time that he acquainted me with this, he insinuated the same account, with some additions, into his ship-mates, who, with one voice

voice, concluded, that if I passed by this island, our expedition might probably end ignobly and unfortunately, since it was likely that Clipperton had already alarmed the coast, which must of course have brought on an embargo upon all ships trading to leeward. This indeed, would have added, beyond all expression, to the necessity we were under of providing for ourselves whilst it was in our power so to do. I must own, the thoughts of living wholly upon our European stock, were very melancholy. It must, in a very little time, have reduced us to the danger of being famished, if we could neither supply ourselves with provision out of the enemy's ships, or by the means of some enterprise on some shore, where provisions were to be had. In this case, we must either have starved or surrendered to the enemy, or immediately have steered our course for the East Indies, without either money or credit, and so our expedition must have ended before it was well begun. It was not without mature deliberation, and many considerations that I formed a resolution of going to Chiloe, nor could I but think myself happy in having so good a prospect, in so great an exigence, of preventing a greater number of evils, and

A. D.

1719.

Reasons for  
going to the  
island of Chi-  
loe.

G

disasters

A. D.  
1719.

disasters than might have been to be foreseen. In hopes then to get an additional supply of provisions, to keep the sea with, for as long as might be necessary, and especially if captain Clipperton had alarmed the coasts, for us; or to enable us to subsist in some obscure island, where we might remain till the Spaniards should imagine we had abandoned their seas, and then come upon them again, when they had the least apprehensions of being molested by us. In hopes of gaining this very material advantage by going to Chiloe, we steered for that island.

On Saturday, November the twenty-eighth at fix in the morning, the Teats of Cucao on the said island of Chiloe bore of us, East North East, and at noon, the Northermost part of Chiloe bore of us, North East, distant four leagues, at the same time that our latitude, by observation, was forty-one degrees forty minutes South.

S E C T.

A. D.

1719.



## S E C T. III.

*Arrival at the island of Chiloe, on  
the coast of Chili.*

MONDAY, November the thirtieth, we entered the channel, between the continent of Chili, and the island of Chiloe, and stood in for the harbour under French Colours, with an intent to surprize and attack the towns of Chacao and Calibuco. But when we came into the channel, our pilot seemed to be as great a stranger to it as myself, and the wind beginning to blow fresh, and rainy thick weather coming on, I anchored at ten in the morning, in thirteen fathom water, between the point of Carelmapo, and a small island called Pedro Nunez. Immediately after we had come to, the windward tide made out with prodigious rapidity, which instantly caused a great sea, and the wind increasng at the same time,

A. D.

1719.

the channel, all about us, appeared like one continued breach. In the midst of this, our ship laid a great strain upon her cable, which unfortunately parted at two in the afternoon. Nor could we have hopes of recovering our anchor, because the buoy of it had been flayed and sunk, an hour or two before we had been thus forcibly set adrift. I did not think it safe or prudent to hazard the loss of another anchor, where there was such a certainty that it would happen; and therefore stood directly across the channel for the island itself of Chiloe, attended with the dangerous disadvantages of a boisterous gale, and thick rainy weather, at the same time that we were surrounded with seeming shoals, and, in a manner, bewildered and lost in a navigation quite unknown to any man among us. When we had advanced within a mile of Chiloe, we ranged along shore to the Southward, in hopes to discover the town of Chacao. We passed by two commodious bays, but they had nothing like a town appearing near them, and, at length, we came about a point of land, which is to be known by a high rock like a pyramid, which almost adjoins it. Having rounded this point, I found myself entirely out of the tide's way, and

com -

commodiously sheltered from all other inconveniences; and therefore I anchored over against a cross that was fixed on the Northern side of the harbour, and, by good fortune, had just day-light enough to direct us to a place of retreat, from the dangers we must have incurred in the midst of such a variety of violent tides, unfrequented channels, and foul weather.

That I might lose no time, in carrying my design of coming hither into execution, I, the next morning, sent my second lieutenant in the pinnace, well manned and armed, to make a discovery of the towns of Chacao, and Calibuco, and of their situation and the approach to them; and, at the same time, captain Hatley went in the launch, to find out a watering place for us. He soon returned again, and brought with him an Indian, who had shewn him what he went in quest of, and where he might, at once, get both wood and water, without any great trouble, even under the command of our own cannon, and out of all danger of being surprized. Upon which, that we might do our business here as soon as possible, I sent a number of hands, in the launch, with casks immediately to be filled, with people to be

A. D.

1719.

After much  
trouble find a  
safe harbour.

Sent the second lieutenant in the pinnace to discover the town of Chacao.

A. D.  
1719.

at the same time employed in cutting of wood, all well armed, together with an officer of marines and seamen to be ready on their guard against a surprize. The Indian gave us hopes of a sufficient supply of all we wanted, but came in the evening to my people, who were ashore, to acquaint them, the country was forbidden to supply us with any thing. The pinnace not being yet returned, this information made me apprehend the enemy had taken her, and, by that means, had learned what we were.

A Spanish officer comes on board from the governour

December the third, at seven in the evening, there came to us a Spanish officer, in a Piragua rowed by eight Indians, who was sent by the governour to be informed of what we might be. That I might deceive him as much as I could, I ordered that none should appear on the deck, or, at least, be heard to speak, but such as could speak either French or Spanish. As soon as we had a sight of the Piragua, I hoisted French colours, and, when the Spaniard came on board, I told him, we were a homeward bound French ship called the St. Rose, and that my name was le Janis le Breton. Under this notion he stayed with us all night, and I accommodated him with the best my ship afforded,

We pass for a French ship.



A. D.

1719.

afforded, and he departed the next morning, not seeming, in the least, to suspect us. I wrote to the governour by this gentleman, signifying, that I wanted a supply of provisions to carry me back to France, desiring him to assist me in what he could.

I now concluded my pinnacle must be lost, since this Spanish officer had given me to understand, it was not above three hours sail to the town of Chacao. What could one have thought else, after an absence of three days, but that they had either deserted, or been taken, either of which accidents would infallibly be the ruin of my design? But the sequel will shew what little confidence I could place in the most of my officers.

Give my  
pinnacle over  
for lost.

December the fifth, at seven in the morning, we saw two boats sailing towards us, which I, at first, supposed to be our own, and some boat she had taken. But as they approached, I found them to be two piraguas full of men, who, after they had viewed us, went on shore upon a small island lying in the mouth of the harbour where we lay. Upon this, I ordered my people to put on their grenadiers caps, and to spread themselves fore and aft, to appear as formidable to them as we could. This was all we



A. D. 1719. could do, for it would have been in vain for us to have followed their light piraguas in our heavy launch.

See a white flag hoisted ashore.

December the sixth, at five in the morning upon observing a white flag on the shore, I sent away the launch, completely manned and armed, to the place where this flag was, but they found no person to treat with them. They found a letter which was made fast to the flag-staff, and a dozen of hams laying close by. The contents of the letter were as follows.

From the Prefidence of Chacao,  
December 6. 1719.

SIR,

S Ince I had the news of seeing a ship in the place where you are, and perceiving, at your coming in, that she was incommoded, and that even your pinnace passed by this town, by which they shewed their ignorance of the dangers of coming into my harbour, I immediately conjectured she was come for a pilot to bring your ship in; therefore sent a soldier, in a canoe, to discover what they were. But your people bore

A. D.  
1719.

' bore away from him in my sight. You  
' sent me a letter, which I read with plea-  
' sure, and assure you I am sorry for your  
' misfortune by contrary winds, in which I  
' also partake---Nevertheless I can but think  
' how accidentally you have alarmed all my  
' country; for (commonly) ships that are  
' bound to this port, send their boats in be-  
' fore them, which you not doing, has gi-  
' ven me all sorts of suspicions; which you  
' had not done, had I had any certain as-  
' surance of your being the St. Rose, the ship  
' you mention: but I believe you do not  
' care to declare yourself thoroughly, since  
' you did not send directly to me. I never  
' saw such a manner of alarming this pro-  
' vince, and putting the inhabitants under  
' arms: you little think what passes in this  
' fortress.

' I sent a canoe to call your pinnace back,  
' but they would not be known, but on the  
' contrary, crowded sail, and put themselves  
' in a posture of defence, and fired two su-  
' fees at my boat, who had no arms in her,  
' I not thinking it necessary: since which, I  
' hear they have been ashore on an island,  
' where they killed a sheep, and were seen  
' to re-embark very hastily, leaving behind  
' them

A.D.

1719.

‘ them all manner of actions entirely contrary to the letter you favoured me with ;  
 ‘ for which I complain to you of the extravagances of your men, that you may know  
 ‘ their ill practices ; and they may assure themselves, that I and all the inhabitants  
 ‘ will oblige you to pursue your voyage.  
 ‘ You must needs have had wood and water enough, in the time you have been in  
 ‘ the port where you are, and having orders from my king to supply no foreign ships  
 ‘ with provisions, I cannot order what you have desired of me. I thank you for  
 ‘ the compliment of drinking my health,  
 ‘ and have sent you a dozen of hams, as the fruit of this country, and as fruit only  
 ‘ I have taken that liberty.

Don NICOLAS SALVO,

I did not much regard this gentleman's threats, though at the same time I must acknowledge, all my hopes of success, in any attempt I might make, against the towns of Chacao and Calibuco were entirely vanished. The cowardice of my people, in the pinnace, was a great disappointment to me ;

for

for I really looked upon them to be nine of the stoutest and most resolute men in my ship, and imagined they could not be scared or taken by (almost) any number of Indians : however, I returned an answer to the governor, and ordered it to be fixed in the same manner they had found his letter.

A. D.  
1719.

From on board the *St. Rose*\*,  
December 6, 1719.

SIR,

I had the honour of yours, and am very uneasy at my people's behaviour ; they had not the least direction from me for so doing ; I sent them only to discover your harbour, in order to pay my respects to you, for which reason I let them have only one day's bread to subsist on. I can say nothing in their behalf, but am ready to believe they have mistaken the way, and were driven by necessity to be so outrageous as to kill the sheep you mention ; and being strangers here, they fired at your boat, I suppose, under a notion of their being wild Indians----Here I could gladly compound and make restitution for the loss your people have sustained, besides bringing my boat's

\* I assumed that name for my ship to pass the better for French.

A. D.

1719.

' boat's crew to condign punishment, not  
 ' only on your account, but also for disobey-  
 ' ing my orders----I shall sail in forty-eight  
 ' hours, and if they fall into your hands in  
 ' that time, I beg you will be pleased to send  
 ' them on board, as an instance of your friend-  
 ' ship----Although I have not been supplied  
 ' with any refreshments, my people have  
 ' passed by several flocks of sheep, &c. and  
 ' have never touched any of them, or any  
 ' thing else belonging to the inhabitants----I  
 ' must once more beg of you, if my people  
 ' are with you, as I have good reason to be-  
 ' lieve they are, you would be pleased to send  
 ' them on board to me: in regard I should be  
 ' very sorry to give you any uneasiness by  
 ' making reprizals. I heartily thank you  
 ' for your present of hams, and beg you'll  
 ' accept of a little pepper, a small quantity  
 ' of butter, and a few cheeses.

S I R,

I am, with all respect,

YOURS,

\* LE JANIS LE BRETON.

Early

\* This was the name of a French captain who was well known on these coasts.

Early the next morning, the white flag was hoisted at the same place, and the boat went on shore, and brought off the following letter.

A. D.  
1719.

From the Prefidence of  
Chacao.

SIR,

I Received yours with much approbation,  
‘ but as for your boat, I have not taken  
‘ her, neither have her in my power ; only  
‘ this I know, that they have been ashore at  
‘ some Indian houses, and have rummaged  
‘ and taken several things of small value.  
‘ The Indians here being very poor, these  
‘ actions are very unhandsom : but I know  
‘ that these ravages are practised by sailors,  
‘ who practise nothing but mischief ; they  
‘ have even carried away with them two In-  
‘ dians, which I persuade myself they took  
‘ for pilots to direct them in their return on  
‘ board your ship : but as soon as your boat  
‘ arrives, I beg those Indians ashore, for they  
‘ are not savages, but my domesticks and  
‘ christians.---Sir, I have not your pinnace,  
‘ neither do I design to attack her, for had I  
‘ been so minded, I could have destroyed her  
‘ with my artillery, as she passed by this for-  
‘ tress ;

A. D. 1719. ' trefs; and you may assure yourself, that if  
' they come, I will remit them with all  
' speed. I must, moreover, desire your ex-  
' cuse, in that I have not yet supplied you  
' with provisions and refreshments, for it is  
' not in my power to do it; I farther entreat  
' you to order your men, when they go for  
' water, not to take any cattle they may meet  
' in their way, and that will be a convincing  
' proof of your sincerity---I am very much  
' obliged to you for your present, which I  
' esteem very much, as being a specimen of  
' the food of Europe, of which I am a na-  
' tive. I remain with all my heart,

Your most humble

and obedient servant,

Don NICOLAS SALVO.

Being in despair of ever seeing the people who were absent in the pinnace, and being as much at a loss to know how and whereabouts Chacao was situated, as I was the first day I came hither; because we had no draught of this island that I could depend on; I determined to alter the stile of my letters, and see what

A. D.  
1719.

what could be done by making a breach with the governor. I was determined by some means or other, to make amends for my loss of time in coming hither, by such a recruit of provisions as could be got, though even in the most hazardous manner, since it was impossible I should proceed without it. And therefore being now reduced to the alternative, either to desist from the prosecution of the design for which I came out of England, or to venture ourselves among the woods and distant habitations of the Indians, to get such a quantity of one thing or other, as might render us capable of keeping these seas, as long as might be necessary for our purpose; I thought it as eligible to finish our days with our voyage here, as to perish at sea, or surrender ignominiously to the Spaniards. I had this reflection to encourage me, that the seamen, of our nation, who had ventured to cruize in these seas, before me, had, by their actions, instilled a dread of the English name, into the Spaniards inhabiting the coasts of Chili, Peru and Mexico, though none, that I ever heard of, had molested this island before. But being buoyed up with the success of some others who had been in other parts of these sea-coasts before me, I did not doubt a fortunate



A. D. 1719. fortunate event, and therefore sent the following answer to the governor's last.

From on board the *St. Rose*.

SIR,

I Have received yours of the seventh instant, and by this inform you, that I am extremely dissatisfied with my people's indiscretion. If they had returned in the time I prefixed to you in my last, I might by this time, perhaps, have failed, according to my promise: but can now no longer forbear observing to you, that as my people have lived on nothing but salt provisions, for a great while, I can hardly restrain them from doing irregular things in such a place as this, where cattle is so plenty, which I am not allowed to purchase for money. I am very sensible what a condition your fortress is in, and what strength it consists of, which I have been informed of by very good authors; and I have now a passenger on board, who has been here frequently in the time of Don Pedro de Molina, and by this begs leave to kiss the hands of Padre Arnoldo, Padre Gatie, Don Francisco Carenot, and Don Juan de Vouert.

I

‘ I think it very hard I cannot prevail upon A D.  
 ‘ you to let the Indians bring in provisions to 1719.  
 ‘ me, at their own price, and am sorry to tell  
 ‘ you, that provisions I must have, and that  
 ‘ very speedily. All the forces of Chacao,  
 ‘ Calibuco, Carelmapo, or Castro, shall not  
 ‘ frighten or deter me from supplying myself:  
 ‘ but however, I had rather get it peaceably,  
 ‘ than cause such a disturbance; and have  
 ‘ made choice of the place where I am, ra-  
 ‘ ther than come within your jurisdiction, be-  
 ‘ ing unwilling to give you any uneasiness.

SIR, &c.

LE JANIS LE BRETON.

I did not think fit to tell him, in plain terms,  
 we were English; for I had two views in  
 concealing it, the first, to hinder them from  
 alarming the coast, and the other to give them  
 a dislike to the French traders, who have con-  
 siderable interest, with the Spaniards, in these  
 kingdoms. This would certainly have had,  
 in some measure, the desired effect, if we  
 had not had the ill luck to be discovered.  
 However, to make no farther delay, by a fruit-  
 less correspondence with the governor, I the

H

next

A. D.  
1719.

Mr. Brooks  
first lieutenant  
dispatched to  
take what  
provisions he  
could find.

The launch  
returns with  
store of pro-  
visions.

And soon  
after the pin-  
nace returns,  
after a week's  
absence.

What they  
did and suffer-  
ed.

next day sent Mr. Brooks, my first lieutenant, in the launch, with twenty-nine men well armed, to take what provisions, of any kind, he could meet with. Soon after they were gone, there came a Piragua with a message from the governor, signifying, that if I would send an officer to Chacao, he would treat with me. But I gave him for answer, that I would treat no where but on board my own ship; and farther, that it was now too late, since I had already dispatched eighty men (I thought it proper to magnify their number) to take all they could find. In the evening, the launch returned, and brought with her a large Piragua she had taken, and both laden with sheep, hogs, fowls, hams, barley and green peas and beans. Soon after the pinnace arrived, which I had so long given over for lost, with all her crew; but they were so terrified, that I had no hopes of their being fit for service in any little time. The officer told me, he had fought his way through several canoes of armed Indians, and that it was with great difficulty he got clear of them, which he did by making his passage round the island, which was at least, a circumference of seventy leagues. This, nothing but an excess of mean-spiritedness could have urged them to, even if they

A. D.

1719.

they had had such numbers to encounter with as they reported: but especially when there was but one boat of unarmed Indians, and a Spanish serjeant, who came off to them without the least shew of violence, as the governor mentions in his first letter, and as some of themselves afterwards confessed; but added withal, there were great numbers of people on the shore, who they were apprehensive would follow them. The officer himself had no excuse for his imprudence, in exposing himself so much as to pass by the town; nor could he alledge any better reason for not returning on board again, as soon as he had got a sight of the town, but that the tide hurried him away, at unawares, and that in the fright he had forgot he had a graplin in the boat to come to with, till the tide had shifted. In short, the dread amongst them was so great, that rather than pass by the town of Chacao again, though even in the night, when they could not have been perceived by the inhabitants, they chose rather to row round so great an island as this, in a small open boat, crowded with as many men as she could well carry, in a climate as much subject to hard gales of wind and dangerous seas, as the coasts of England. It was a hundred to one they were

H 2

not

A. D.  
1719.

not lost. But perceiving them all to be confounded with shame and regret, I said but little to them, and only made the officer who commanded them, sensible of his unpardonable mismanagement, which had been the ruin of the advantageous views I might have had, in taking either Chacao or Calibuco.

I must beg leave here to make a digression, to shew what probability I had of easily making myself master of one of these places, if not both, by what my Frenchman, Joseph de la

What probability I had of taking either Chacao or Calibuco.

Fontaine, who had been here several times, informed me. He said, there was, indeed, at Chacao, what they called a fortress, but that it did, by no means, deserve that name; for that he never saw above two guns mounted, and those with their carriages half buried in the earth; that they never dreamt of being attacked by any Europeans there, and, being in perfect peace with the Indians, it made them negligent in their discipline, and suffer what strength they had, to run to decay; and that what garrison they had, consisted chiefly of Creolian Spaniards, who are worse soldiers than the Indians themselves. From all this, one may naturally conclude, that if I could have brought my ship before the town of Chacao, in the space of forty-eight hours after

my

my  
a fee  
of t  
appr  
succ  
they  
by a  
to gi  
have  
could  
I sho  
verno  
any  
him,  
who  
crew,  
armed  
man v  
greed  
city, f  
what  
Indian  
therefo  
towns,  
what v  
and far  
the chi  
self in

my first arrival, I could have met with but a feeble opposition in rendering myself master of the place. But after they had been under apprehensions of being attacked for seven days successively, one might reasonably conceive, they had lost no time in preparing themselves, by all the contrivances they could think of, to give us a warm reception: but could we have come upon them in so short a time as I could have wished, and had no cause to doubt I should, on my first arrival here, the governor could not have had time enough for any reflection that might have suggested to him, that we were English. The Indians who were brought on board by my pinnace's crew, told me, there was near a thousand armed Spaniards on the island, and my Frenchman was of the same opinion: but both agreed, that if I would let them alone in their city, for so they called their town, I might do what I pleased in the country, where the poor Indians must bear the weight of all damages. I therefore laid aside all thoughts of going to their towns, under hopes of furnishing myself with what we wanted, from the Indian plantations and farms, which, in the sequel, afforded us the chief article of what I proposed to myself in coming here, *viz.* a competent stock

A. D.

1719.

A. D. of provisions, and for this purpose I kept one  
1719. of my boats continually employed in foraging.

December the eleventh, we had, for the most part of the twenty-four hours, hard gales of wind from the North North West to the

The pin-  
nace sent with  
a paper to be  
fixed on the  
door of some  
remarkable  
Indian house.

North East At three in the afternoon, I sent the pinnace on shore with a bill written in Spanish, to be fixed on the door of some remarkable Indian house, whereby I gave them to understand, that they had no body to blame for the hostilities we committed on them, but the Spanish governor, who, by his tyranny had hindered them from bringing what provisions they had, to a market where they might have had their own prices: but that since they dared not to disobey his commands, if they would manage their affairs so as to leave four hams, four bushels of wheat, and an indifferent quantity of potatoes in their houses, they should sustain no farther loss; but, that if they would not comply with this demand, nor make this contribution, I would burn their houses and all their standing corn, and commit all the outrages I could devise. But I found no advantage by this, for the Spaniards took care it should not have its desired effect: nevertheless I was supplied tolerably well by my people, who proceeded with

conti-



continual diligence and good order in that respect; but proved sad fellows in some others, an instance of which I shall give in the person of Betagh, my captain of marines, whom I sent on shore with a party of his men, to see what service he could do with them: but as soon as he had landed, he called to his serjeant, saying, ‘~~Damn~~ *Cursed* ~~Scoundrel~~, why did he send me with these people, I don’t know what to say to them, therefore, prithee take you the command upon you;’ and he himself retired into the ranks, and his lieutenant Dod, (a gentleman who had rode in the guards many years) placed himself at his right hand, and the new captain managed his charge very well: however, this made the people entertain a mean opinion of their land commander, which he found by experience before he returned to the ship; for his men, meeting with some difficulty in shipping what they had got, and captain Betagh refusing to give them any assistance, they left him on shore, where he stayed all night; for it came on to blow so hard before the boat was unloaded, that it was impossible to row to windward, to fetch him. I asked captain Hatley, who commanded the boat, how he came to treat his brother officer with so much disrespect?

A. D.

1719.



A. D.  
1719.

He answered, that Betagh would not vouchsafe to wet his foot, and that he could not prevail upon any of the crew to carry him into the boat, who complained they were already fatigued with carrying burdens, and that they positively would not load themselves with the weight of one who was neither seaman nor soldier. Notwithstanding which excuse, Betagh laid the whole blame on my second captain, and threatened to use him very roughly, if ever he met him on shore; to prevent which, when they went on business together, Hatley always took care to be boat-keeper. I could, by several examples of this kind, inform the world what assistants I had in my expedition; but I fancy it will be sufficient that I assure my reader, we had several transactions full as ridiculous as the last mentioned, which happened amongst my chief officers.

December the thirteenth, in the morning, I sent my pinnace to sound in the harbour's mouth, and at noon they returned, having found from seven to nine fathom in the channel, and three and a half and four on the bank.

December the sixteenth, We had now our decks full of live cattle, such as European sheep,

A. D.

1719.

sheep, hogs, guanacoes, poultry in abundance, and hams, &c. as also a good quantity of wheat, barley, potatoes, maiz, or Indian corn; and, in short, I computed that I had added four months provisions to what remained of our English stock, and that, without the least hindrance or molestation from the enemy.

December the seventeenth, at four in the morning, we began to unmoor, at six, we got our small bower on board and at eight weighed, but it falling calm, we anchored again under the Northern shore in six fathom; at noon we weighed, and sailed out, with the wind at West South West. The night before we departed hence, one of our men deserted, and made his escape into the woods. It was beyond all dispute that this fellow would give a full account of us. This being added to the ill conduct of my pinnace's crew, who frustrated my design of taking something considerable here, together with the contrary execution of all my orders, by those officers whom I had hitherto entrusted in affairs of importance, made me leave this place with regret, and in despair of ever having any thing done to purpose, except I left the ship myself upon all occasions, which would have  
been

Departure  
from the I.  
land of Chi-  
loe.

A. D. 1719. been, by no means, customary or proper. Upon the whole, I could not forbear reflecting on the mismanagement of some gentlemen in England, who blindly made use of their interest to prefer persons to posts of too much concernment for their capacities, when we might, at the same time, have had officers who were men both of honour and ability; who had seen action, and served under regular discipline from their childhood, and some such I had recommended; but because they could not promise to eat the heart of a Spaniard every morning (which was an expression often made use of in captain Clipperton's vain low way of boasting) they were ordered to be discharged, and others sent in their room, who though they came to us under the name of Veterans, proved to be ignorant Novices.

*An*

*An Account of the island of Chiloe,  
on the coast of Chili, and its inhabitants.*

AS none of our nation have as yet given <sup>Extent of</sup> an account of this place from their own <sup>the island of</sup> Chiloe. knowledge, I presume it will not be unacceptable to the reader to be acquainted a little with it. The body of this island lying in forty-two degrees, forty minutes South, is from North to South about thirty leagues in length, but in breadth not above six or seven leagues. It is watered by several small rivers, and produces several kinds of useful trees, and yields an agreeable prospect when you are near enough to observe the great numbers of Indian farms and plantations, which are dispersed at small distances from one another, among the woods on rising grounds. The space between this island, and the continent of Chili contains more islands than are well known, the least of which are said to be well inhabited and to abound with cattle ; among these there are very uncertain tides and currents, so violent, that it is by no means safe to venture among them. I would advise all  
strangers

A. D.

1719.

Directions  
for going into  
Chiloe.

strangers, who go in at the North end, to keep the island-side of the channel aboard, giving the Northermost point of Chiloe a good birth, that is, keeping it a pretty good distance; which done, run along shore to the Southward, and you will pass by two bays, which seem to be commodious, but hold your way till you come to a point almost contiguous to which is a high rock somewhat like a pyramid; pass between this rock and a small round high island, which you will see near it, and run a little way directly up the harbour, which looks like the entrance of a river, and you will have a safe port to drop your anchor in. But in going in, take care that you do not fall under five fathom water from the shore, for the nearer you advance to the small island before-mentioned, the less water you will meet with therefore keep your lead going, and be bold with the shore towards the North side of the harbour. When you are got in, you will there have the greatest depth; the Southern side is shoal water. My pilot carried me a contrary way to what I have now directed, for he advised me to keep near the main land of Chili, which I did till I had got the length of the point of Carelmapo, having to the Southward

Southward of me several small islands, which you will see as soon as you have the channel open. This proved a frightful and unfortunate passage to me, for the loss of my anchor here, was one of the greatest damages I could have sustained. In short, if any ships should be by necessity, or otherwise, driven to take shelter at this island, I have given the safest instructions they can follow.

A. D.

1719

The soil is very fertile, and produces in great plenty all sorts of our European fruits and grains and they have fine pasture lands, wherewith they graze great numbers of cattle, particularly sheep.

The soil.

The air is wholesom, it being situated in a temperate climate; but I think it reasonable to conclude, their winter season is unpleasant, the island being bounded on the West by an immense ocean, without any other land to skreen it from the moist vapours, which are brought hither by the violence of the Westerly winds, which for the generality reign in these latitudes: all which must render it an uncomfortable place in the winter months; and the rather as it is to be considered, that the same parellels of latitude to the Southward of the Equator are allowed to be  
much

The air.

A. D. much more cold than they are to the Northward.  
1719.

Cattle. They have abundance of very handfom middle-sized horfes, which they are faid to mount with great dexterity; and have like-wife a creature which they call Guanacoës, or Carneros del Tierra, *i. e.* the country ſheep; theſe partake very much of the reſemblance of a camel, but are nothing like ſo large. They have long necks, and I have ſeen of them between five and fix foot high. Their wool, which is no other than a fine ſort of long hair, is extremely fine. They ſmell very rank, and move with a very flow majeſtic pace, which hardly any violence can make them quicken. They are nevertheless of great ſervice in the mines of Peru, where they are employed in carrying the ear, &c. Their fleſh is very coarſe, which we experienced by ſome of them which we had ſalted for a ſea ſtore; beſides theſe, they have European ſheep, and great numbers of hogs, but they ſeem not to be overſtocked with black cattle.

Game. There is here no want of fowl, both wild and tame; of the wild there are ſeveral ſorts peculiar to the country, and in particular, a ſort of ſmall geefe which are found on the banks

banks of their rivers, which not only afford an agreeable prospect by their beautiful whiteness, but are also of an excellent taste; as to their tame poultry, they are of the same kinds with ours.

A. D.

1719.

The inhabitants here are almost, in all respects, the same with those on the main continent of Chili. They are of a moderate stature, of a deep olive-coloured complexion, with coarse shaggy black hair. Some of them have countenances by no means disagreeable; they seem to be naturally of a fierce and warlike disposition, but the continual oppressions of the Spaniards, and the insinuating artifices of the Jesuits, who are missionaries in these parts, have sufficiently curbed and broke their spirits. Monsieur Frezier, gives us an account in his voyage (page 84 of the Engl. Tran.) that the indians inhabiting the continent to the Southward of this island, are called Chonos, and that they go quite naked; that in the inland part, there is a race of men of an extraordinary size, called Cacahues, and that these being in amity with the Chonos, have sometimes come with them to the dwellings of the Spaniards of Chiloe. This gentleman, *viz.* monsieur Frezier, tells us, that he was credibly informed by some who had been

The inhabitants.



A. D.

1719.

been eye-witnesses of it, that some of these are about nine or ten feet high ; but I had a sight of two of them, one whereof was a Cacique, who came from the Southward of the river of St. Domingo, who seemed to me to differ little or not at all from the Chilenians, as to stature and person.

Their habit  
described.

As to their habit, they are decently clad in what they call the Poncho, Montera and Poulaines ; the Poncho is a sort of square carpet with a slit cut in the middle of it. It is wide enough to slip over their heads, so that it hangs upon their shoulders, half of it falling before, and the other half behind them. Under this, they generally wear a short doublet. On their heads they have the Montera or Spanish cap, made with a fall to cover their neck and shoulders. And on their legs they sometimes have the Poulaines, which are a sort of knit buskins without feet to them ; in short, their appearance is by no means uncouth, but rather decent.

Their dwell-  
ings.

Their habitations are rather better than is commonly made use of by such a sort of people. They are indifferently large, and firmly built with plank, but having no chimneys, their houses are very black and sooty within-

side

fide. They enclose some of their grounds with pallisadoes.

A. D.  
1719.

Notwithstanding they have here a sufficient plenty of every thing necessary for comfortable subsistence, the inhabitants are some way or other, or seem to be, debarred from tasting the fruits of their labour, and particularly in the article of bread; for perhaps not having conveniences for grinding and preparing their wheat, they are put to the miserable shift of making cakes of the sea-weeds. This, however, through use, is esteemed by them, and was not disapproved of by some of my people who eat of it: besides this, they have their maiz, or Indian corn, which they manage in several manners to answer the end of bread: and to all this we may add, that they have an abundance of potatoes and other roots. As to liquors, these Indians have not been contented with the produce of brooks and springs only, like many nations of their complexion, but have found a means of making a liquor, called Chicha, of the Indian corn. In this they follow the footsteps of their neighbours on the continent of Chili: but their Drinkings being generally productive of mischief, the Spaniards take care

Their manner of living.

A. D.

1719.

to fet bounds to them, in that particular, as much as they can.

Their arms.

Their arms are of several sorts; those who have no European weapons, retain their own, such as pikes, darts, &c. They are particularly dextrous in throwing a sliding noose at the end of a long thong of leather, with which they are sure of catching an ox, horse, or any thing, even in its full career; this they call a Lays. In short, by all I could see of these, and hear of the Chilenians, they seem to resemble them in almost every respect, and there can be no wonder at that, when one considers their close neighbourhood with the main land of Chili. They make use of small drums, some of which I have seen; they are very small, and the heads of them are made with goats skins with the hair on, and make a sad and dull sound.

Their commerce.

They have among them a small woollen manufactory, consisting of carpets and the necessaries of apparel before mentioned. They export cedar, both in plank and wrought in boxes, chests, escrutores, and the like, together with hams and tongues, wherewith they supply perhaps all Chili and Peru. As to their European trade, they have none: but the Spaniard who came off from the governour, told

A. D.

1719.

told me, the people of this island wondered the trading ships never offered to put in here, for, said he, we have a great deal of money amongst us, and have here a safe port, free from the dangers incurred by going to leeward, where strangers must be in perpetual uneasiness for fear of the men of war, which would be sent in quest of them; whereas, business might be done here, and all be over before they could be advised of it, at so great a distance as from hence to Lima, their ships of war there fitted out, and gained so far to windward, as would be required for them to reach the place.

It has been observed of the Indians of the kingdom of Chili, that they had two articles, in their way of living, in which they differ from all the other nations which have yet been heard of; and the first is, that they have no notion of a God of any sort, and of consequence pay no worship to any supreme power; and the second is, that they are such enemies to civil communities, that they never live together in towns and villages, so that the country seems to be thinly inhabited, though in reality it be very populous; for they live dispersed in farms at a good distance one from the other, every one having his planta-

Their Government.

A. D.  
1719.

tion, so that almost every family has all the necessaries of life of its own growth and produce. However, though they are thus scattered, they are not wholly independant; for they have all of them a chief of their particular tribe or clan, who is called a Cacique, and who has his dwelling conveniently situated amongst them, in order for the more speedily summoning them together on affairs of importance, which he does by sounding a sort of a horn, which being heard by his vassals, they repair to him without delay. The Cacique assembles them to war, or upon other occasions, and has an absolute power of executing justice amongst his subjects, who are likewise his relations, he being only the head of a family, all the inferior branches of which, adhere to the interest, and obey the commands of their lord, whose power is said to be, hereditary. In all these respects, do the inhabitants of this island, resemble those on the neighbouring continent, excepting, that their Caciques are somewhat stripped of their real authority by the government of the Spaniards, who having these people under a more secure subjection than any on the continent, they frighten them into the most laborious submission, by their menaces and  
hard

\* Th  
a silver-

A. D.

1719.

hard usage. The missionaries in the mean while enslave them by their superstitions, or pretended conversions of them to christianity, of which they can have no particular conception. Thus the common sort being deluded, and the Caciques, their chiefs, having exchanged their original authority, or paternity, for the little ostentation of being allowed to wear a silver-headed cane, which puts them upon the rank of \* Spanish captains in outward appearance, they are become a prey to the indispensible will of their despotic masters.

Notwithstanding all this, the Spaniards have sometimes stretched their administration to so great a height, that the Indians have been obliged to defend themselves against it, and have began to think death preferable to slavery; for Monsieur Frezier, in his voyage, (Page 82 of the English translation) has given us an account of a revolt, which happened <sup>Revolt of the Indians of Chiloe.</sup> at the time he was in the South Seas, where in the Indians killed fourteen or fifteen of the Spaniards. These, however, are said to have taken a full and sufficient revenge, and in return to have massacred two hundred of the Indians,

I 3

\* The Spanish captains, both in sea and land service, wear a silver-headed cane, as a badge of distinction.

A. D.  
1719.

dians, going into the very islands to destroy them. This struck such a great terror into these poor people, that that they were glad to sit down quietly under their misfortune. And though the Spaniards are but badly equipped with arms, these Indians have never dared to take such advantages over their oppressors as they daily might, since the number of the former is but inconsiderable, when compared with the multitude of the latter. The strength of the Spaniards here, has been, and may be still, so very inconsiderable, that as Monsieur Frezier observes, any European power that should be inclined to gain any footing on the coasts of these seas, might with ease possess itself of this island, which might be of the greatest consequence to such as should succeed in attempting a settlement here, since it is capable of affording a continual subsistence to a very numerous colony: which might be of unspeakable detriment to the Spanish inhabitants of Chili and Peru.

I believe I shall make it appear reasonable, that there could be no great difficulty in succeeding in an undertaking of this kind, not only by what I have before said of the small force of the Spaniards, but also from the readiness which the Indians might be in to assist

any



any that might come there against the Spaniards. It is a plain indication they were not very hearty in the Spanish interest, when they could suffer us, in small parties, of twenty, sometimes ten men, and very often less, to pillage their farms, far and near, without any resistance, when even themselves have been lurking about the woods, and were often eye-witnesses of the ravages we committed; at the same time that my people were so dispersed from one another (according to the usual custom of seamen) that they might at their own discretion, and without the least hazard, to themselves, have destroyed them. This one would think, they rather chose to lose what little they had, than do the Spaniards the service of making such an opposition as they might have made, against such a handful of my men as infested them. They did not, perhaps, esteem them so much theirs, as the Spaniards enemies, and may have entertained some hopes, that our design was to drive their troublesome inmates from amongst them. Of what benefit (in case of a war with the Spanish crown) the taking possession of this island might prove, I leave to more penetrating judgments to consider, and shall only add, that the artifices of the Missionaries

A. D.

1719.



A. D. 1719 are supposed to be the chief security of the Spaniards in this place, as well as in most of the rest of their settlements in South America.

Their embarkations.

Their embarkations here are particular in this, that they, for want of nails and other utensils, sew their boats together very artificially with oziers; they are composed of three main pieces, *viz.* the sides and the bottom, which is flat; each of them is an entire piece of timber. They row in the same manner we do, with more or fewer oars, according to their dimensions.

*Voyage continued.*

I sailed from Chiloe with a design to go strait to the island of Juan Fernandes, but was prevented by my people, who were possessed with notions of vast advantages to be made by going to the port of Conception. It was our Frenchman who had been so instrumental in our Chiloean attempt, who was the cause of this. Finding his accounts hitherto had been tolerably just, they once more listened to him. He assured them there was always five or six ships in the road of Conception, and others daily coming in and going out

That

Tha  
ble f  
and  
little  
prote  
twen  
dranc  
carg  
dy,  
ships  
mone  
befid  
ding  
comm  
and E  
fail of  
to our  
could  
any k  
it was  
very  
theref  
vail u  
thithe  
the go  
ferter  
patch,

\* T

A. D.

1719.

That they have very often both ways considerable sums of money and plate on board of them, and though they were large ships, they were of little force ; that there was no fortification to protect them there, and that if there were twenty sail, we could not meet with any hindrance in the taking of them all ; that their cargoes consisted chiefly of corn, wine, brandy, flower, bread, jerked beef ; that the ships bound to Conception always brought money with them to purchase these cargoes, besides the money to be got from rich trading passengers, who carry on a considerable commerce between this port of Conception, and BuenosAyres over land ; that we could not fail of ransoming whatever ships should fall into our hands at very great rates, and that if we could but get into Conception before they had any knowledge of our being on their coasts, it was past all doubt that we should make a very extraordinary hand of it there. He therefore advised them to endeavour to prevail upon me to make the best of our way thither, and the rather, as it was certain the governour of Chiloe would send our \* deserter to Conception with all imaginable dispatch, and most likely in some small vessel,

by.

\* The man who had deserted from us at Chiloe.

A. D. 1719. by sea, to save the time which would be lost if he went by land ; and that if they arrived at Conception before us, the rest of the coast would in a very small time be universally alarmed, and that so we should have no opportunity or chance left of meeting with any thing till it was imagined we had abandoned those seas. In short, most of my officers and people began to look upon this Frenchman as the only one who could instruct them in the best ways of making their fortunes. Notwithstanding I kept my eye upon my orders and instructions, we had met with so many unforeseen accidents, that it was not in my power to follow them so strictly as I would. I was now convinced within myself that I could not keep up to the strict observance of them without a manifest danger. It was not the account this man gave, that had any particular effect on me, at this time ; my own reason having sufficiently taught me the nature of the management of affairs, that might relate to us, upon these coasts. I was very justly apprehensive there would be a general alarm given of us in a very short time, if it was not partly done already, by the necessity I was under of going into Chiloe ; nor could it well be doubted but that it had been done

A. D.

1719.

done e'er now by captain Clipperton, if he was in being, especially to leeward. If this were so, the trade would be certainly laid aside in the Peruvian ports, for some time at least. Be this as it would, I knew by too much certainty, the time was now near at hand, when there would be an embargo laid on all shipping, except the windward traders. Those I knew must at any hazard, and if there were ever so many cruizers in quest of them, be obliged to make their voyages to the coast of Chili, in order to supply Lima and the other numerous settlements of Peru with the common necessaries of life, which they must otherwise want. Instead therefore of losing time by going to the island of Juan Fernandes, whither I was to go, to join captain Clipperton, who if he had not miscarried, had been long gone from thence, I thought it was most adviseable for me to make sure of something while it was in my reach; and since my orders were become usefess by the nature and circumstances of my situation, I became inclined to try my fortune at the port of Concepcion.

In the mean time, as every body in such cases is fond of delivering his sentiments, and as it is impossible to keep a ship's company in  
such

A. D.  
1719.

such awe and order in so remote a part, as in short voyages near home; so, every one of my ship's company, who could say any thing at this juncture, (as they all imagined themselves to be most nearly concerned in their lives, liberties and fortunes) did not fail to speak his mind somewhat insolently, particularly one William Morpew<sup>Jish</sup>, who was one of those men whom I had out of the Ruby, and had been in these seas several years, took upon him to tell me that it could not signify much whether we arrived two or three days sooner or later at Juan Fernandes; that I was a stranger here, but that the Frenchman and himself were so well acquainted with those seas, that every body hoped I would be advised and go to Conception, and desired I would not put a mere puncto to orders, in the balance against such a prospect, nay, certainty of success, if we were so happy as to arrive at the port of Conception in time. In a word. they altogether assured me, they had the interest of the Gentlemen Adventurers in view, as much as their own, and that they would perish before they would injure them in any respect; at the same time remonstrating, that if I had not success in my proceedings afterwards, I should have

no

*L. Pina  
An Indi*

s in  
e of  
ing  
em-  
heir  
l to  
icu-  
e of  
and  
pon  
uch  
oner  
as a  
and  
hose  
ad-  
ed I  
, in  
nay,  
y as  
ime.  
they  
ven-  
and  
ould  
ame  
ccess  
have  
no



*I. Pine Sculp.* *Page 222*  
*An Indian of the Island of Chiloe in pursuit of a Bull*



no  
the  
opp  
refo  
in E  
exp  
bloo  
I  
ficul  
my  
way  
gent  
migh  
how  
lone  
they  
them  
in go  
have  
on, t  
tion r  
I not  
very  
migh  
fition  
panie  
In  
island



no body to blame but myself, and to avoid this, they entreated me not to lose this particular opportunity ; and that for the rest, they were resolved to stand by me and the Gentlemen in England with all fidelity (to use their own expression) as long as they had a drop of blood in their veins.

A. D.

1719.

I was however still divided betwixt the difficulty I felt within myself to dispense with my instructions, and the danger of giving way to the remonstrances and advice of these gentlemen ; but considering how easily they might be brought to throw off command, and how little I should be able to help myself, alone and by myself as I might be said to be, if they came to that extremity, I complied with them, and resolved to spend two or three days in going to Conception. After all, I should not have done it, had I not really been of opinion, that an attempt upon the port of Conception might have been very beneficial, and had I not had hopes of meeting with the Success very soon, when acting jointly together, we might put an end to the ungovernable disposition of the mutinous part of our ship's companies.

In our way to Conception, we made the islands of Mocha and St. Mary, and on December



A. D.  
1719.

cember the twenty-third, we came abreast of the Teats of Bio Bio, and finding the water discoloured, we hove the lead, but had no ground with thirty fathom of line. This thick appearance of the water is caused by the rapidity of the outset of the river of Bio Bio, which makes the sea appear of a brown colour at the distance of five or six leagues from the shore.



S E C T.

road  
na ;  
ned a  
prize  
with  
found  
them,  
from  
whilst  
foon a  
ing to  
found  
anchor



## S E C T. IV.

*Arrival in the Bay of Conception,  
in the latitude of thirty-six degrees  
South, on the coast of Chili, and  
transactions whilst we lay there.*

ON the evening we arrived in the bay  
I of Conception, but could not be  
certain that we saw any ship in the  
road which goes by the name of Talgagua-  
na; however, I ordered the boats well man-  
ned and armed, to go up in the night to sur-  
prize what ships or vessels they might meet  
with there. They had strict orders, if they  
found any vessel or vessels too strong for  
them, to do what they could to hinder them  
from sending any thing valuable to the shore,  
whilst I worked up to them in the ship as  
soon as the wind would permit. I kept ply-  
ing to windward, after they were gone, till I  
found that I lost ground. I therefore came to  
anchor. I weighed soon after; but could  
make

A. D. make no hand of it all night, and at daylight I could not discover any thing above us.

Take the  
Solidad d'An-  
day, and a  
bark laden  
with fruit  
from the  
island of Qui-  
quirine.

About noon, captain Hatley returned in the pinnace, and informed me he had taken the Solidad d'Anday, which was the only ship in the road or port. That she was of about one hundred and fifty tons burthen. and being lately come from Baldivia, had nothing on board of her, except a few cedar planks. In fine that there was no body on board of her, except the boatswain, an old negroe, and two Indian boys, and that he had left Mr. Brooks, the first lieutenant in possession of her, with orders to bring her down to us by the first opportunity. In his return to my ship, he took a small vessel of about twenty-five tons, near the island of Quiriquine, which lies in the harbour, and where she had been to take in pears, cherries and other fruits for the Conception market. This vessel belonged to a priest who had been gathering fruits, and was now made a prisoner in her; for having the curiosity to advance too near to my people, in order to discover what they might be, he and his cargoe unluckily for him fell into their hands, together with four or five Indians. Immediately after they had taken this vessel, there was another small one, which made its appearance

A. D.  
1719.

appearance between the island of Quiriquine and Talgaguana. I could perceive, with my prospective, that she passed within pistol-shot of my pinnace; but captain Hatley, who commanded her, never once offered to follow her, or bring her too. Hatley, truly, said, he did not mind her, though his boat's crew all agreed she was full of men. This was the most stupid neglect in him that could be well conceived, since, if he had any thoughts about him, he might have concluded, that this vessel was bringing advice of us from Chiloe. I did not fail to reprimand him for this, but to what effect when it was too late, except to instruct him in his behaviour, in the like cases, for the future?

December the twenty-sixth, the Priest being very solicitous to ransom his bark, he left my ship at seven in the morning, in my pinnace rowed by five Indians, to get money for that purpose. At noon, Mr. Brooks, first lieutenant, brought down the ship we had taken, and anchored about half a mile short of us. The Contre-Mastre or Boatswain of her had not been on board of us above two hours before he gave me an information of a vessel laden with wine, brandy, and other valuable things, bound to the island of Chiloe, lying at an-

The priest who was taken in the fruit bark goes ashore to raise money to ransom her.

We are informed of a ship laden, bound for Baldivia, that was lying in the bay of Herradura which was two leagues to the Northward of us.

K

chor

A. D. 1719. chor in the bay of Herradura, about two leagues to the northward of us. Upon this

The fruit-bark sent under the command of Randall the second lieutenant to take her.

I ordered Mr. Randall, our second lieutenant, with the boatswain of the *Solidad*, and twenty-five men, to go thither in the *Mercury*, (for so we called our fruit-bark) with positive orders not to set a foot on shore, or make any hazardous attempt whatsoever. But the next evening they returned with a dismal story, that they went into the bay, and finding the vessel hauled dry on shore; the officer ordered his people to land, and bring away what they could out of her, whilst himself and three or four more kept the bark a-float. When they came up to her, they found her empty; but at the same time seeing a small house just by the vessel, they began to be of opinion her cargo might be lodged there. The officer immediately ordering them up thither; away went the poor fellows, with no body at the head of them, without any regard to order, every one endeavouring to be foremost, but their career was soon stopped; for they had no sooner got upon the bank, than they discovered the enemy rushing out furiously upon them. Some of those who were present, told me, they believed they might have made

Of their Engagement with an Ambuscade of Spaniards where they lost five of their men.

A. D.

1719.

a safe retreat if they had not been astonished at the manner of the enemy's approach; for they stood gazing to see a number of horses coming upon them in a regular manner without riders; and that it was not till they heard the noise of those behind, that they attempted to make their escape to the Mercury. They all escaped except five, who were overtaken in shoal water, and they all agreed that they were cut to pieces; for that they saw them trampled upon by the horses, and immediately after heard a confused noise of cutting and flashing with swords or spadoes. It was happy the Mercury accidentally grounded, for otherwise they must all have been cut off: but the enemy retired when they had advanced within musket-shot of our people, who with much difficulty got to their vessel afloat again. The water being now very low, they were obliged, as they went out, to keep near to a point of land, from whence the Spaniards, under the shelter of the woods, galled them with their fire; but the wind being fair, they soon passed it; and lying all close in the bottom of the bark, they had only one man wounded, who was shot through the thigh. They told me, they perfectly saw the manner how the Spaniards came

An account of their manner of attacking our people.

down

A. D.  
1719.

upon them, which was that, according to what passage they had, they were preceded by twenty or thirty, or more horses a-breast, linked to each other. These were two deep; then came the enemy, mounted, and lying upon their horses necks, driving the others before them. They were not once seen to sit upright in their saddles, except when there was no danger, or to fire their muskets. When they had got near my people, they threw out lines with nooses at the end of them to catch them, and accordingly James Daniel, one of my foremast men, was ensnared after he had run a good way into the water, but, to use his own expression, was dragged out again after the rate of ten knots. In short, they are universally dextrous at this exercise, and I have seen a Spaniard bring a man up by the foot as he ran along the deck. They say they are sure of any thing they sling at, though at the distance of several fathoms. This new addition to the misfortunes we had hitherto laboured under, quite dispirited the greatest part of my ship's company, and nothing was now heard but murmuring and discontent fore and aft, d<sup>amning</sup> the South Seas, and declaring that if this was making their fortune, they had better have staid at home

The people  
discontented.



A. D.

1719.

home and begged about the streets; but they had nothing now to blame but their own obstinacy in persisting that we should put into this port. What seemed most to discourage them, and make them fear they should get little or nothing in these seas, was our misfortune in finding only one old empty ship in this harbour, which is looked upon as one of the chief on this coast. I said all that I could to encourage them, and to disperse the melancholy which was fixed in every countenance. I must own I was touched at our unhappy circumstances; but took care to hide the disquiet of my mind, as well as I could, from every body. But as I was expostulating with Mr. Randall, who had the charge of this unfortunate undertaking, I was agreeably surprized at the sight of a large ship which we saw coming about the Northernmost point of the island of Quiriquine. It was almost dark, and she could not perceive what we were, so that this ship stood in without fear or apprehension of what so speedily befel them. This sudden appearance gave us no hurry, for we were always clear, and ready for action. Our launch was immediately manned to prevent her running on shore, or going to sea again, and my cable was ready



A. D. 1719. to flip if there had been the least necessity for it. As soon as she had approached us near enough, I hailed her, to which she returning no answer, I fired into her. This was no sooner done, than I ordered the launch to put off directly. The enemy, upon this, shortened sail, but kept fast their anchor, and just as I was going to flip my cable the launch came up with her, and gave her a volley of

We take the  
St. Fermin  
the same e-  
vening.

The value of  
her cargo &  
of what it  
consisted.

small arms, and she instantly came to, and called for quarter. It was about two of the clock in the morning before my boat returned to inform me of any news of her, when they brought with them the Spanish captain, and some of the chief passengers, who acquainted me, their ship was called the St. Fermin, that she belonged to, and came last from Callao, that she was of about the burthen of three hundred tons, and had a very small cargo on board, which consisted of sugar, melasses, rice, coarse French linnen, and some cloaths and bays of Quito, together with a small quantity of chocolate, and about five or six thousand dollars in money and wrought plate. I sent Mr. Hendry (the agent for prizes) on board of her in the Mercury, to inspect her lading, and to order every thing he could find valuable out of her, and

and  
wife  
brou  
man  
all t  
mela  
thou  
eatab  
Do  
of th  
migh  
This  
him  
Conce  
wife a  
pose.  
In t  
ing all  
cornea  
after b  
exami  
who, a  
St. Fe  
in mak  
being  
to us i  
Dec  
aboard

and the ship's company sent their agent likewise. in the afternoon they returned, and brought all the bales, boxes, chests, portmanteaus, &c. that were in her; and also all the rice, with a large quantity of sugar, melassies, and chocolate, and about seven thousand weight of good rusk, with all her eatables and stores.

Don Francisco Larrayn, who was captain of this prize, earnestly entreated me that he might have the liberty to ransom his ship. This I willingly consented to, and suffered him to go in his own launch to the town of Concepcion, with a merchant who was likewise a prisoner, to raise money for that purpose.

In the mean time, we were busy in searching all over our prize, that nothing might be concealed, and every body was strictly look'd after by people appointed for that end, who examined the pockets, and cloaths of all such who, at any time, came from on board the St. Fermin, and our carpenter was employed in making a slight deck over the Mercury, it being probable that she might be of great use to us in coasting along shore.

December the thirtieth, there came a boat aboard from the governour with a flag of

The Spanish captain goes to Concepcion to raise money for his ransom.

The governor of Concepcion sends a flag of truce, with a letter and a present from the governor.

A. D.  
1719.

truce, and an officer, who brought word that three of our people who were missing in the skirmish at Herradura were killed, and the other two much wounded about the head; but that they were in a fair way of recovery, they having been diligently attended on by the governour's own surgeons. This gentleman brought me a present of seven jars of very good wine, the product of the country, and farther informed me, that the boat which Hatley had suffered to go from him, had brought advice of us from Chiloe, and that our deserter was in her, guarded by a few unarmed Indians. By this messenger I also received a letter from the governour, the contents of which were as follow.

S I R,

I Received the two letters you did me the pleasure of sending, the first by the priest, who came ashore in your pinnace, and the other by the captain of the St. Fermín; you know, Sir, that to treat for ransoms in war, the commanding officers, as well by land as by sea, must (or ought to) be provided with passports from their Princes, and without that, it was not convenient to

enter

‘ enter into any treaty, and I should be much  
‘ to blame if I did it; if you will therefore do  
‘ me the pleasure to send me one of your of-  
‘ ficers with your passport or commission,  
‘ whereby you are impowered to cruize, I  
‘ will, in that case, give you my word of  
‘ honour, and that of the king my master,  
‘ to send you back the officer as well as the  
‘ passport, and then we will treat about the  
‘ the ransom of the St. Fermin, and the ex-  
‘ change of prisoners in our respective pos-  
‘ sessions. I have two of yours that are  
‘ wounded on the head by the cut of a sword,  
‘ and I have ordered them to be fed from my  
‘ table, and my surgeons (who are men of  
‘ experience) have dressed their wounds; they  
‘ will do very well, therefore be not in pain  
‘ for them, and I will send them to you as  
‘ soon as I have had a sight of your commis-  
‘ sion, which method is what I practised in  
‘ Flanders, when I was at war with your na-  
‘ tion, and what I have known to be prac-  
‘ tised from the first to the last of nine cam-  
‘ paigns which I served in Flanders. You  
‘ shall have your pinnace returned without a-  
‘ ny manner of difficulty whenever you please,  
‘ and I will be ready to do you all the good  
‘ offices in my power, when I am assured  
‘ that

A. D. ' fured that you have a legal commiffion  
1719. ' from your king. But if you have not any  
' fuch thing, I beg you would frankly declare  
' it, in order that we may come at fome con-  
' clufion in this affair, that may be of a fuit-  
' able convenience to both of us.

' The prieft did not return, becaufe he  
' has been given to underftand, that gentle-  
' men of his function cannot be detained ac-  
' cording to the laws of arms; but that, on  
' the contrary, they are to be difmiffed as foon  
' as taken; and indeed I muft confeß, that  
' I have both feen it done, and have done it  
' myfelf. Nevertheleß, if you are inclined  
' to have him again, you fhall, provided that  
' I fee your aforefaid commiffion, and I will  
' fend a pafport for the officer you fhall fend  
' to me, figned with my own hand, the ho-  
' nour of which I dare not forfeit. I defire  
' you, Sir, to fend me all the letters which  
' you have taken from the captain and paf-  
' fengers, though they are opened; forasmuch  
' as after you have had a fight of them,  
' they cannot be of farther fervice to you.  
' You cannot but know that it is ufual to  
' tranfmit all letters taken from one part to  
' the other, although they are fometimes o-  
' pened, according as it feems convenient to  
' the

‘ the commanding officer who takes them.  
‘ Send them directly to me, because you know  
‘ it is not proper that many should see them,  
‘ since it may be of great prejudice to the  
‘ publick credit. I expect from your civility  
‘ all the favours I have begged of you, and  
‘ in return, I shall wish for an opportunity  
‘ of making you sensible how much I am,

Sir,

your most humble

and obedient Servant

Don GABRIEL CANO.

Conception, January the  
9th, N. S. 1720.

‘ Postscript. I beg you would be so good  
‘ as to send me Joseph de la Fontaine, a  
‘ Frenchman who lived some time in this ci-  
‘ ty, and is now in your ship, and has been  
‘ with you ever since you departed from St.  
‘ Catherines; he belonged to Monsieur la  
‘ Jonquiere, he is a little man, and flat nosed.  
‘ I would willingly speak with him, and pro-  
‘ mise you upon honour, that I will remit  
‘ him

A. D.  
1720.

‘ him to you again ; but don’t let him know  
 ‘ that I intend to return him I once again  
 ‘ beg of you to do me the favour of sending  
 ‘ me all the letters, as well those directed to  
 ‘ any of the inhabitants, as those directed to  
 ‘ myself, although they are unsealed, and de-  
 ‘ fire you would command the passengers to  
 ‘ give them all to you, to the end that I may  
 ‘ distribute them. Put them all up together  
 ‘ in one packet, and direct them to me. If  
 ‘ you will send one of your officers, that  
 ‘ speaks either French or Spanish, I engage  
 ‘ my honour that I will not detain him by a-  
 ‘ ny means. I expect your answer to day,  
 ‘ and for the future will keep up a regular  
 ‘ correspondence.

CANO.

Postscript 2, If you send an officer with  
 ‘ your commission, together with all the let-  
 ‘ ters for me, and the rest of the neighbour-  
 ‘ hood of this city, you may detain the offi-  
 ‘ cer who brings this You shall have your  
 ‘ pinnace as soon as I can get the Indians to-  
 ‘ gether who are now dispersed, and it shall  
 ‘ come with your officer in his return.

CANO.

To

To  
 sending  
 dent  
 he sh  
 same  
 war v  
 their l  
 theref  
 among  
 captain  
 affair v  
 ships.  
 ed the

S  
 ‘ I H  
 ‘ with  
 ‘ ditio  
 ‘ conf  
 ‘ But  
 ‘ Fren  
 ‘ infir  
 ‘ your

To this I returned in general, that as to sending my commission, it was neither prudent nor usual, but that for his satisfaction he should have a copy of it, and at the same time, see the printed declaration of the war which had of late broke out between their Britannic and Catholic Majesties. And therefore having sufficient hostages on board amongst my prisoners, I sent Betagh, my captain of marines, on shore to transact our affair with the governour and captains of the ships. But the day before he went I received the following letter from the governour.

A. D.

1719.

Conception, January  
the 10th.

SIR,

‘ I Have received your obliging letter, and  
‘ can see by your stile that I am treating  
‘ with an officer of honour, and man of con-  
‘ dition, therefore, Sir, I will put the same  
‘ confidence in you, that you have in me.  
‘ But as it is very troublesom to me to write  
‘ French, and having at the same time, an  
‘ infinity of affairs on my hands, I will let  
‘ your officer know my pretensions by word  
‘ of



A. D. ' of mouth, begging you to be convinced of  
1720. ' the perfect consideration wherewith I am,

Sir,

your most obedient

and most humble servant,

DON GABRIEL CANO.

Captain Be- January the first, captain Betagh went to  
tagh sent to Conception with a copy of the commission,  
Conception with a copy of the declaration of war, &c. and all that day  
the commission, &c. to the enemy appeared in bodies of horse, and  
treat with the governour a- in the night they posted themselves along the  
bout the ran- shore from the city to the point of Herradura,  
som of the ships we had and kept firing by intervals the whole night.  
taken.

I was not less vigilant aboard; for as at the  
island of Chiloe we were always prepared for  
action; so here, whether watching or sleep-  
ing, we might be said to be constantly under  
arms, and at the turning of every glass, du-  
ring the night, we beat three ruffs on the  
drums, and made three huzzas; and for a  
further security against any attempt they  
might make in boats, in the night, when  
they

they might imagine we were all carelefs and asleep, I had a net spread, of seven feet deep, above the gunwale, from the the main shrouds quite forward, and kept our ship, for the most part, under way, when we had wind; and when we had none, the ship's oars were always out, to serve as so many booms to prevent our being boarded and set on fire. At midnight they fired twelve guns from the city or town of Conception; which, I believe was designed to give me some idea of their strength, and soon after captain Betagh returned with a Flemish jesuit, a Spanish lawyer, and an English and a Scotch man. The jesuit assured me he was only come to pay his respects to me, and to do his utmost to promote the affair of the ransom, and bring it to an immediate conclusion. Therefore the first thing I did, in order to satisfy him as far as possible, I shewed my commission to the Englishman, who read it in Spanish to them. After which the jesuit soon discovered to me, that though his profession was spiritual, he did not think it beneath him to meddle with matters merely temporal; for he said he was come to acquaint me with what the governour, and the captains of the St. Fermin and Solidad had resolved on,

which

Capt. Betagh, return at midnight accompanied by a Flemish jesuit a Spaniard, a lawyer, an Englishman and a Scotchman.

A. D.

1720.

which was to give me twelve thousand dollars for the ransom of both the ships, and the Mercury included, instead of sixteen thousand dollars which I had insisted on for the St. Fermin only. To this I positively, and in few words answered, that all their persuasions, artifices, and pretences should never make me agree with them. In short, the whole night was spent in fruitless discourse, both sides proving inflexible. The jesuit had an affair of his own too, which was what chiefly drew him to venture himself amongst us; though doubtless he put it on the footing of an act of charity done to the unfortunate captain of the St. Fermin. We had taken in this ship, the St. Fermin, ten large silver candlesticks, which were, as I apprehend, designed for the jesuits church here. Now this holy father very modestly broke off from talking of the ransom of the ship, to beg me to make him a present of those candlesticks, each of which weighed above twenty-five pounds sterling. He in an humble and suppliant manner represented to me they were a legacy left to his convent, and hoped I should make no dispute of so noble a charity as it would be, to put them into the possession of those for whom they were designed;

A. D.

1720.

and especially since they were intended to be part of the most holy furniture of the altar; that it would be a deed of the highest merit in me, if I restored them, and would lay him, and the rest of his brethren under the strictest obligations to send up their prayers for success to me in all my undertakings. This promised return for so considerable a gift, seemed to me to be so inconsistent with reason, that I did not much mind it. I thought it very improbable they should pray for a happy issue to the undertakings of those, whose business it was to do all the damage they could to the good father's fellow-subjects, and who centered all their hopes of success in the direct and open detriment and hurt of such Spaniards as fell into their hands, not to mention how awkward it would be for them to implore Heaven that those, to whom they will not allow so much as the name of Christians, should prevail against the truly Catholic. Upon the whole, I had so indifferent an opinion of the species I was to be paid in, in return for so much good silver, that I was so heretically obstinate, as not to come into the good Father's measures. However, thinking to oblige him, I offered to let him have them for their weight in dollars, which con-

L

sidering

A. D.

1720.

considering the great price they pay in these parts for the fashion of wrought plate, was a very advantageous offer. But he acquainted me in the first place, that they never bought any thing for sacred uses; and in the next, that as the workmen were forced to put a great deal of allay into plate to be wrought, it would be difficult to determine the different values of the dollars and the candlesticks, so as to come at a nice equation of the matter; and therefore after a deal of needless dispute and entreaties, both about this, and the ransom of the ships, the jesuit and the rest affirming that the captain of the St. Fermin was not able to raise above twelve thousand dollars, and pretending that the present scarcity of money was because the inhabitants had removed all their effects a great way from the town, upon advice that a squadron of English men of war was coming into those seas, there was nothing done. This I considered as trifling with me, and therefore insisted still on sixteen thousand dollars, including the ship Solidad into the bargain, and desired they would let the captains know from me, that if they deferred the payment of that sum, longer than twenty-four hours, they should irrecoverably lose their commands.

I

I also took this opportunity to let the governour know the ill success of our conference.

About six in the morning they left us, after having wasted the night in much said, and nothing agreed upon. We made as formidable an appearance as our force would admit of, while these gentlemen were in the ship; for I began to apprehend, and not without reason, that their chief business was to pry into, and give an account of our strength.

Betagh told me, the governour seemed mightily pleased we were a commissioned ship, saying, that now the trading people would be delivered from the dreadful apprehensions of falling into the hands of pirates, who had formerly treated them very barbarously. He received Betagh very civilly, and assured him we should not meet with any delay in our business, and told him that the captain of the *St. Fermin* had his money ready counted to send on board; but the gentlemen of the place very handsomely confined him from taking any view of the town, and took care also to have him go on shore, and come off again in the night. The man who went to wait on captain Betagh, happening to have a grenadier's cap on, gave great offence, some crying it was in disrespect and ridicule of the

A. D.

1720.

But depart  
in the morn-  
ing without  
coming to a-  
ny conclusion  
after a night's  
treaty.

A. D.  
1720.

mitre, and of consequence an unpardonable piece of insolence, so that it was happy the fellow saved his cap, or his bones from being broken.

I begin to  
suspect the  
governour's  
honour.

Two days being past, and hearing no news from the governour, I began to be certainly convinced they had something else in view more than the accommodation of the ransoms. But on January the fourth, at ten in the morning, my two wounded men came on board in my pinnace, and brought me the following letter from the governour.

Conception, January the  
14th, N. S. 1720.

SIR,

UPON what you have favoured me  
with in the letter concerning the ransom of the St. Fermin, I refer myself to what the captain has written to you; forasmuch as that affair must be decided between you two. He asks you hostages for the payment of twelve thousand dollars, and in that he seems not to be out of the way. For as he looks on you to be a man of bravery and honour, if to his misfortune you should prove not to be so, it would

be

' be in  
' part  
' so f  
' of yo  
' to be  
' not f  
' office  
' fessio  
' you  
' appea  
' him  
' own  
' All I  
' to fee  
' your  
' of ho  
' ers an  
' me h  
' see, S  
' either  
' ticle  
' tell m  
' have  
' by fea  
' son,  
' him :  
' before  
' which

A. D.  
1720.

‘ be intirely in your power to set fail, and de-  
‘ part with his ship and money ; though I am  
‘ so far from entertaining any such opinion  
‘ of you, that I would willingly offer myself  
‘ to be your surety. But, in short, he will  
‘ not send the money till he sees two of your  
‘ officers, and till you have put him in pos-  
‘ session of his ship in such a condition as  
‘ you shall have agreed upon ; and as this  
‘ appears reasonable to me, I cannot oblige  
‘ him to do otherwise, leaving him to his  
‘ own liberty to make his own conditions.  
‘ All I shall have to do in this affair will be  
‘ to see your officers safely returned on board  
‘ your ship ; for which I give you my word  
‘ of honour. I now send you my two prison-  
‘ ers and your pinnace, and desire you to let  
‘ me have all those belonging to me. You  
‘ see, Sir, that I never designed to detain  
‘ either the one or the other. As to the ar-  
‘ ticle of the chaplain of the ship, who you  
‘ tell me is a lawful prisoner, because you  
‘ have always seen it done ; it may be so  
‘ by sea, but never by land, for which rea-  
‘ son, I thought myself obliged to demand  
‘ him : in short, I have sent you, as I said  
‘ before, your two soldiers and pinnace, after  
‘ which there can be no difficulty remaining



A D. ' to you, that may hinder your sending on  
 1720. ' shore all those belonging to me, which  
 ' will oblige,

S I R,

Your most, &c.

CANO.

I receive ad-  
 vice of the go-  
 vernor's dou-  
 ble dealing  
 with me.

My people brought me word from the captain of the St. Fermin, that he would have sent me the ransom money in forty-eight hours after he left me, but that the governor would not permit him by any means, though he was now in hopes he should prevail with him to consent to it, as their design was laid aside, of attempting to take or destroy us. It seems they had assembled all the Europeans upon this occasion; but the Spanish gentleman who had been on board, insisted, at their council, upon its being too hardy an enterprize. I was now well assured of what I had hitherto only doubted; for I could see by the governor's trifling, that he never designed to do, or consent to any thing to our purpose, and that while he disingenuously charged the captain with the blame of

not

not send  
 ship, he  
 ner, if  
 short, I  
 terms, a  
 was in c  
 ate insta  
 fet on fi  
 had a le  
 lows.

S I

' P Err  
 ' la  
 ' send th  
 ' you k  
 ' arms i  
 ' the wr  
 ' word,  
 ' ed me  
 ' ferred  
 ' day w  
 ' fies no  
 ' been f  
 ' what  
 ' the tw  
 ' to mo

not sending the money for the ransom of his ship, he threatened him in the severest manner, if he offered or presumed to do it. In short, I sent him an answer in plain pressing terms, and was resolved to convince him I was in earnest; and to give him an immediate instance of it, I ordered the Solidad to be set on fire. The effect of this was, that I had a letter from him the next day, as follows.

A. D.

1720.

Upon which  
I order'd the  
Solidad d'An-  
day to be  
burned.

January the 15th, 1720.

S I R,

Permit me to tell you, in answer to your last, that you are in the wrong not to send the two hostages that were demanded; you know that according to the laws of arms it is thus practised, you are not less in the wrong to suspect me, and disregard my word, since you see I sent you your wounded men, and your boat, and if I have deferred a few days, I acquainted you yesterday with the reason of it, therefore it signifies nothing to repeat them, since you have been so outrageous as not to give faith to what I have said to you. In a word, send the two officers, or at least one, any time to morrow, without which I believe we shall

L 4

not

A. D.

1720.

‘ not be able to come to any conclusion ;  
 ‘ however, does it not appear reasonable to  
 ‘ you to put some trust in my word of ho-  
 ‘ nour, that I gave to send back the offi-  
 ‘ cers you was to send, as soon as the captain  
 ‘ has got possession of his ship, you see I  
 ‘ cannot fail, since you have two or three  
 ‘ prisoners in your ship. Let us make an end  
 ‘ of this matter, Sir, have confidence in me,  
 ‘ and consider with yourself, it will be bet-  
 ‘ ter for you to take the twelve thousand dol-  
 ‘ lars, than burn the ship, from which no  
 ‘ advantage can arise to you. I expect your  
 ‘ answer, having the honour to be perfectly

Yours,

CANO.

‘ Postscript. I can’t tell, Sir, whether you  
 ‘ will be able to read this letter, I had so  
 ‘ much business at the time yours arrived,  
 ‘ that I was obliged to get another gentleman  
 ‘ to write it for me ; for God’s sake be rea-  
 ‘ sonable, and so endeavour to order this  
 ‘ matter that there may be content on all sides.  
 ‘ I suppose it would give you no satisfaction  
 ‘ to burn the ship, and go away without the

‘ twelve

‘ twelve  
 ‘ in your  
 ‘ of the

To this  
 that as I  
 ly to every  
 easily rep  
 pay me t  
 asmuch as  
 to suspect  
 this port,  
 them ; tha  
 ny of my  
 who had a  
 me, as un  
 nourable r  
 contriving  
 was the on  
 in short, i  
 thousand o  
 would in  
 had done

The ne  
 letter from

‘ twelve thousand dollars. At least, if I was  
‘ in your place, I should do what the captain  
‘ of the St. Fermin desires of you.

A. D.

1720.

CANO.

To this I answered by word of mouth, that as I had acted in this affair so handsomely to every one concerned as I had, they might easily repose so much confidence in me, as to pay me the ransom without hostages; forasmuch as they could not have the least reason to suspect by my behaviour, since I came into this port, that I would act dishonourably by them; that I could not in conscience send any of my officers on shore, amongst people who had all along dealt so ambiguously with me, as under a pretence of treating in an honourable manner, to be privately plotting and contriving how they might destroy us, which was the only thing they had in view; and that, in short, if they did not send me the twelve thousand dollars by the noon of next day, I would infallibly burn the St. Fermin, as I had done the Solidad.

The next morning I received a fifth and last letter from the governour, to this effect.

Con-

A. D.

1720.

Conception, January  
the 20th, 1720.

S I R,

I Affure you, I did not expect from  
 your civility, that you would have  
 failed doing me the pleasure of answering  
 the letter I wrote last night; I really think  
 it very irregular, for as I have failed you in  
 nothing of all I promised, only deferred two  
 or three days in sending you your boat, I  
 can't imagine what reason you can have for  
 flighting my word, I assure you I could  
 trust very much in yours. But as it is the  
 captain of the St. Fermin, who ought to  
 have this confidence, who would doubtless  
 have had it, had not all the merchants agreed  
 to the contrary, who insisted that it was  
 customary not to send the money without  
 hostages; you may easily conceive that it  
 was not proper I should oblige him to send  
 you the money; the command I have here,  
 does not authorize me to dispose of the purses  
 of the king, my master's, subjects; for as  
 to that they must do according to their own  
 inclinations. In short, Sir, it is determined  
 to send you the twelve thousand dollars,

but

but  
 ing  
 do  
 may  
 he  
 that  
 this  
 cause  
 this  
 hence  
 making  
 place  
 ing,  
 the S  
 you j

Cert  
 could  
 tion of  
 be seen  
 nour,  
 his lett  
 ny tim  
 litical

‘ but it cannot be done till to morrow morn-  
‘ ing, notwithstanding that the captain will  
‘ do his utmost to send it to day, that you  
‘ may have it towards evening ; but I doubt  
‘ he cannot do it till to morrow morning, and  
‘ that without fail ; the reason of meeting all  
‘ this difficulty in raising the money, is be-  
‘ cause the greatest part of the inhabitants of  
‘ this town, have sent all their money from  
‘ hence, upon a report that some ships were  
‘ making the best of their way to attack this  
‘ place. If you will stay till to morrow morn-  
‘ ing, you shall infallibly have the ransom of  
‘ the St. Fermin, and if you will not, do as  
‘ you judge most proper.

I am, &c.

DON GABRIEL CANO.

Certainly after the receipt of this, no one could have doubted of a speedy accommodation of our affairs ; but by the event it will be seen, that the governour’s word and honour, which he was pleased to say, in one of his letters, he could not violate, could be at any time subservient to the carrying on any political base design, and that his tongue could readily

A. D.  
1720.

readily utter what his heart never thought of, and that though his promises were bound with the most solemn ties, yet none were so strong, as to be any way conducive towards the performance of them. However, I sent a letter to his excellency to acquaint him, that ' tho' ' he had been pleased to upbraid me very unjustly, notwithstanding, that I had been so ' complaisant as to tell him I was sensible of ' the truth of the reasons he had hitherto given ' me, for acting thus cautiously; I begged ' leave to observe to him, that now, if I did ' not honour him very much, I could remind ' him of several instances of the violation of ' honour and faith, by some of his predecessors in these parts. But that I could not ' longer be so unjust to my country and myself, as not to complain of the outrageous ' and mean act of stripping my two wounded ' men, as they were passing through the ' town, to come on board of my ship; that ' this plainly shewed his magistrates and officers unworthy of their charge, or his people to be ungovernable; that this could not ' be termed a handsome return for the tender ' usage his fellow subjects met withal from ' me; and that, in short, I would expose no ' hostages; but as he, and the captain had

' sent

' sent  
' expe  
' and  
' was  
' what  
' value  
' had  
' ger o  
' mani  
' tryme  
' tience  
' deceiv  
' and h  
' flame

Janu  
way wi  
ever I  
three o  
might  
structed  
have ex  
I made  
sails, a  
sails on  
Spanish  
Spanish  
This I  
The gr



A. D.

1720.

‘ sent me word that the money was ready, I  
‘ expected it in whole dollars, or by weight,  
‘ and not in small money by tale ; that this  
‘ was but a reasonable demand, considering  
‘ what a trifle it was, when compared to the  
‘ value of so fine a ship and cargoe ; that I  
‘ had now persuaded myself he would no lon-  
‘ ger obstruct an accommodation, which so  
‘ manifestly tended to the interest of his coun-  
‘ trymen, and that therefore I would have pa-  
‘ tience till the next morning, when, if he  
‘ deceived me again, I gave him my word  
‘ and honour the St. Fermin should be in  
‘ flames by noon.

January the sixth, the morning passed a-  
way without any news from the town. How-  
ever I was willing to make an allowance of  
three or four hours, not knowing but there  
might be some real impediment which ob-  
structed their being so punctual as I might  
have expected. But the noon being elapsed,  
I made preparation for sailing, loosing my  
sails, and at the same time unfurling all the  
sails on board the St. Fermin, and hoisting a  
Spanish jack at her fore-topmast-head, and a  
Spanish ensign at her main-topmast-head.  
This I did to hasten them from the town.  
The greatest part of the afternoon being thus  
spent



A. D. spent, and perceiving no sort of appearance  
1720. of any boat coming off to us, I ordered the

St. Fermin to be set on fire. Her cotton sails  
Upon the governour's being loosed, made a prodigious blaze. This  
breach of his word of honour, I order done, I immediately got under sail, much  
the St. Fermin chagrined at the loss of so many days by the  
to be burned. perfidious delusions of the governour; but  
with some satisfaction that I had not sent any  
of my people on shore as hostages for the  
payment of the pretended ransom; for it was  
now visible, they never proposed, within them-  
selves, to do any such thing in it. All their  
aim in demanding some of my officers on shore  
by way of surety, was, that having them in  
their power, and imagining I dared not go a-  
way without them, they would have found  
objections and excuses sufficient to have made  
me stay in this place, till they had thoroughly  
alarmed the neighbouring ports. I hoped,  
however, that the burning of these ships  
would be attended with the advantageous  
consequence of being a warning to the inha-  
bitants of these coasts, to ransom without de-  
lay; and I was afterwards informed, if they  
had but so much as thought I would have  
destroyed the St. Fermin, they would have  
given even twenty or thirty thousand dollars  
to have saved her; for she was one of the best  
failers

failers  
vian t  
hull a  
have  
for a  
was,  
thousa  
world  
one be  
ty of t  
ing, th  
I never  
fer it ti  
perhaps  
it is pro  
nour's  
purcha  
have b  
posts b  
their ch  
sun shi  
make t

*Descr*

THE  
sp

part of

sailers and best fitted out of any of the Peruvian traders. The price I demanded for her hull and cargoe was no more than they must have given to have careened her at Callao; for a ship of her burthen, and fitted as she was, would have cost ninety or a hundred thousand pieces of eight in this part of the world, as I was credibly informed. But no one before having ever committed an hostility of this kind, on the account of not ransoming, they were willing to persuade themselves I never designed it, and were resolved to defer it till the last minute, which happened, perhaps, sooner than they expected; though it is probable that the corregidor's or governor's concurrence must have been largely purchased, before an affair of that nature could have been effected; for as they enjoy their posts but for a short, prefixed term of years, their chief business is to make hay while the sun shines, and a round sum of piasters will make them wink at any thing.

*Description of the bay of Conception.*

THE bay of Conception is very large and spacious, and in the winter months no part of it can well be termed a safe harbour; it

A. D.  
1720.

is about two leagues wide from East to West, and about three from North to South ; there are here but two places where you may be sheltered from the Northerly winds, which are very violent, and much to be dreaded for four or five months in the year, when the sun is to the Northward of the equator ; the one under the north point of the island of Quiriquine which takes up a great part of the West side of the bay, in eleven or twelve fathom water, half a quarter of a mile from the shore ; and the other near a small village called Talgaguana, which is situated on the West side of the bottom of the bay. But in coming into Talgaguana, you are to take care of advancing into less than five fathom, for fear of some shoals, for a particular account of which, see Frezier's voyage to the South Seas, p. 51 of the English translation. In the summer you may without danger anchor in almost any part of the bay ; for I did not go up above two miles into it, and came to an anchor under the island of Quiriquine at the distance of a mile, in twenty-five fathom, soft black ouze.

The town of Conception, called by the Indians Penco, is situated on the East side of the bay of Conception, in the latitude of  
thirty-

thirty-six degrees, forty minutes of South latitude, about eighty degrees West from the meridian of London. It was founded by Peter Baldivia, in the year 1550, but it was destroyed, and the Spaniards twice driven from it, by the Indians, till by stratagem, they once again fixed themselves there. It is now no better than a village, being open on all sides without any defence, except an ill contrived platform of fourteen or fifteen guns, to command the anchoring place before the town, which might be instrumental in the success of any who might make an attempt against it.

Their land force is but in an indifferent condition, either as to officers or private men, which do not exceed the number of two thousand, according to Frezier, who adds, ' that the Spaniards indiscreetly neglect the defences they might have against the revolts of the Indians, whose power they have been sensible of, and who only want an opportunity to destroy them, whatsoever appearance of peace there may be amongst them.

*Voyage continued.*

The St. Fermin being now on fire, and driven out of the bay, nothing remained for

Depart from  
the bay of  
Conception  
and take the  
Mercury with

M

11500

A. D.  
1720.

us but to go to the island of Juan Fernandes, to see if we could find by any marks that the Success was arrived in these seas, and accordingly I directed our course thither, taking the Mercury with us.

Friday, January, 8. The sea was all day perfectly red, appearing as if vast quantities of blood had been thrown into it, and curdled by the water. This the Spaniards say, is occasion'd by the spawn of camarones, or prawns, which must certainly be a mistake. At noon, latitude by observation thirty-five degrees five minutes south, meridian distance west one hundred and eighteen miles. In the morning Mr. Stewart, the ship's company's agent began to weigh the plate, and, at the same time, I order'd Mr. Hendry, the agent for prizes, to take a strict account of every thing in the behalf of the gentlemen in England. The plunder was also sold at the mast, by the ship's company's agent at very extravagant prices. They would not suffer Mr. Hendry to have any thing to do in appraising the plunder, but did not hinder him from taking what account he pleas'd of it. For my part, I was apprehensive they would have converted every thing into plunder; for Betagh, capt. of marines had endeavour'd to form a

The ship's company, &c. receive their moiety of the money and plate taken in the St. Ferdinand, upon which capt. Betagh endeavours to raise a mutiny, but fail'd in the attempt.

party

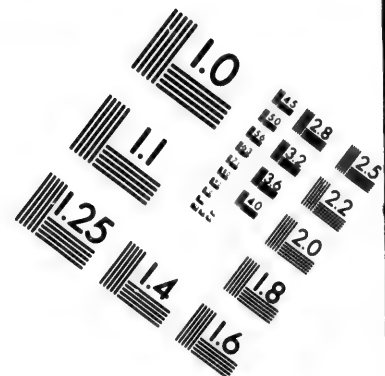
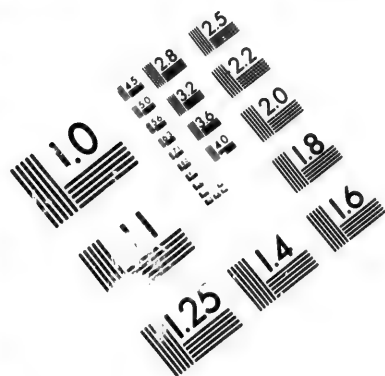
party to  
from ha  
upon fre  
To this  
whilst t  
before t  
if I with  
should d  
pected (  
have had  
my back  
just effort  
of their c  
which, I  
ship suffic  
without  
had presc  
neither pl  
value, wh  
was take  
lading, ex  
sticks for  
found in  
it happen  
lips to sec  
want for  
reasonable  
they were

A. D.

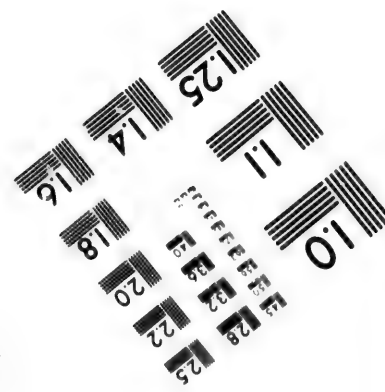
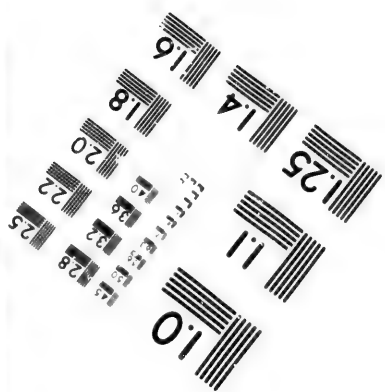
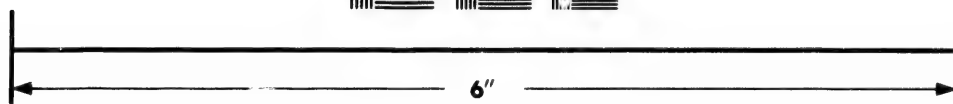
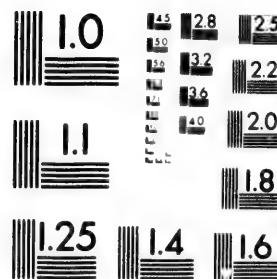
1720.

party to prevent the gentlemen adventurers from having a part of any thing but what was upon freight, or mentioned in bills of lading. To this purpose did he twice declare himself whilst the agents were weighing the silver before the ship's company; telling me, that if I with-held any thing else from them, I should do them injustice, upon which I expected (according to custom) that I should have had the main body of the people upon my back; but I put a timely end to this unjust effort, by referring them to the perusal of their own articles made at St. Catherines, which, I told them (in my opinion) was hardship sufficient upon the gentlemen concerned, without flying out of the bounds they had prescribed to themselves; for there was neither plate, or money, nor any thing else of value, which came out of the St. Fermin, that was taken notice of, on any paper or bills of lading, except only some large silver candlesticks for the church, every thing else being found in cabbins, or private chests. However, it happened that no one offered to open his lips to second Betagh, although the rest did not want for a good share of discontent and unreasonableness too. It happened however that they were not for running matters to so vio-





# IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14560  
(716) 872-4503





A. D.  
1720.

lent an extremity; which if it had not been the case, I am persuaded I should not have had above four or five officers to assist me in the emergency; for even Mr. Hendry, the agent for prizes, was dissatisfied that I would not allow him the shares and post of agent-general, in the room of Mr. Godfrey, who was to have acted as such in both the ships, and who was now in the Success. The account of every thing being taken, and the value of the shares calculated, the ship's company desired me to let them have their dividend shared amongst them, according to the articles at St. Catherines, which request I could not withstand. The prize-money and plunder amounting to ten pieces of eight per share, was thereupon distributed according to each man's respective shares, and all the bails of coarse cloth, bays, linen, ribbons, lace, silk, and several sorts of mercery wares, were equally divided, half to the owners, and half to the ship's company.

Arrival at the island of Juan Fernandez, where I salted some fish, and upon accidentally seeing some uncertain tokens of my comfort's

Monday, January 11. At six in the morning we saw the island of Juan Fernandez, at noon the body of it bore west south west, distant five leagues, meridian distance from Conception two hundred and seventy five miles

miles  
twenty  
From  
fifteenth  
on the  
fishing,  
any man  
Clipper  
per to  
in some  
cury on  
were en  
salted as  
length g  
for any t  
of my c  
ally saw  
name of  
cut out u  
left, as w  
tions to  
repugnan  
he never  
or ever j  
ing by th  
being arri  
the best c  
lay, being

miles west, variation per amplitude six degrees  
twenty-three minutes east.

A. D.

1720.

From Tuesday the twelfth to Friday the  
fifteenth of January I kept standing off and  
on the shore, for my boats, which were a  
fishing, who not having hitherto discovered  
any marks whereby we might conclude that  
Clipperton had been here, I thought it pro-  
per to render my coming hither serviceable  
in some respect, and therefore sent the Mer-  
cury on shore to stop her leaks, while the boats  
were employed in catching fish, of which we  
salted as much as filled five puncheons. At  
length going on shore to make a nicer search  
for any thing that might afford us some news  
of my consort, some of my men accident-  
ally saw the word Magee, which was the  
name of Clipperton's surgeon, and capt. John  
cut out under it upon a tree, but no directions  
left, as was agreed on, by him, in his instruc-  
tions to me. His actions being thus grossly  
repugnant to his instructions, it was evident  
he never meant I should keep him company,  
or ever join with him again. However, be-  
ing by this confirmed in the certainty of his  
being arrived in these parts, I directly made  
the best of my way from hence without de-  
lay, being, with the additional stock of fish

fort's having  
been here.  
suddenly de-  
part.

capt.

*Clipperton*

A. D.

1720.

Sail from  
Juan Fernan-  
des, and  
soon after ar-  
rive on the  
coast of Peru.  
I send Mr.  
Dodd, lieute-  
nant of Ma-  
rines with  
eight men as  
an addition to  
the Mercury's  
crew, who was  
sent along  
shore to look  
into the road  
of Copiapo.

caught here, in a pretty good condition as to provisions, and having all our water-casks filled.

Friday, January 15th, I sailed, and made what dispatch I could to the northward.

Thursday, January 21st, Having a design

to look into Copiapo as I went along shore, I

sent Mr. Dodd, second lieutenant of marines,

with eight men as a reinforcement to the

Mercury's crew, and the next evening they

left us steering in for the land, whilst I kept

the offing, to prevent our being discovered

from the shore. I took care to let the officer

have a copy of my commission, together with

all necessary instructions, and appointed the

Morro, or head-land, of Copiapo to be our

place of meeting again. Their business was

to look into the harbour of that place which

is called Caldera, near to which there are

some gold mines, and from whence they ex-

port that metal in considerable quantities in

small vessels, and the Mercury had this ad-

vantage, that being built in the manner of

the country, they could entertain no suspicion

of her. The next day I myself in the ship

came in sight of the head-land of Copiapo,

and lay to, to the southward of it, that I

might not be perceived by the port which lies

to

to the  
again  
mou  
pinn  
tinen  
ward  
for th  
office  
but c  
I mac  
to the  
to the  
be rea  
next  
the pi  
Pengu  
island,  
are a  
like a  
instead  
fort o  
thers;  
in the  
fast; t  
lieve n  
ger ma  
thing o  
Mercur

A. D.

1720.

to the northward. Lying in this posture over against a small island, which lies athwart the mouth of the river of Copiapo, I sent the pinnace to fish between the isle and the continent, and soon after saw a sail crowding towards us: she, at first appeared to be too big for the Mercury, but proved to be her. The officer told me, he had looked into the port, but could see no shipping there, upon which I made him sensible of his error, and sent him to the right place, which was about six leagues to the northward of us, and ordered him to be ready to look into Caldera ~~by~~ day-light the next morning. As soon as they were gone, the pinnace returned with nothing but a few Penguins, which they had taken on the island, which abounds with them. They are a kind of amphibious bird, being much like a goose in shape, but generally larger; instead of feathers they have a very coarse sort of furr like the young stumps of feathers; their wings serve them for fins, when in the water, with which they swim very fast; their flesh is black and coarse, and I believe not eatable, except when extreme hunger makes it possible, or where there is nothing else to be had. But to return to the Mercury, they looked into Caldera the next

M 4

morning,

A. D.  
1720.

morning, and saw nothing; but instead of making use of the land wind to come off to me, they kept along shore, in the bottom of the bay, till the sea breeze came in so strong that they were very near losing their vessel on a lee-shore, and could not come to me till the next morning, by which means they hindered me almost a whole day and night's sailing, which was more than our circumstances could dispense with the loss of. In this vexatious manner were my orders always executed, not having scarce an officer I could depend on, in the necessary conduct of any enterprise.

Mr. Brooks  
first lieutenant  
and Mr. Rainor  
lieutenant of  
Marines, to  
relieve Mr.  
Randall, and  
Mr. Dodd in  
the Mercury.  
I send the  
Mercury a-  
head to look  
into the road  
of Arica,  
where she  
took a ship  
called the Ro-  
sario.

Wednesday, January 27th, I sent Mr. Brooks, the first lieutenant, and Mr. Rainor, first lieutenant of marines, to relieve Mr. Randall and Mr. Dodd, in the Mercury. I had fitted her with a gang of oars, and upon trial they gave way after the rate of three knots, which might make her extremely beneficial and useful to us in a calm.

Friday, February 5th, I dispatched Mr. Brooks a-head to discover if there was any shipping at Arica, in the latitude of eighteen degrees, twenty minutes south. The next day, at one in the afternoon, (after having ranged along shore by the breaks of Pisagua, Camarones,

A  
Camarones  
head-land  
with a ship  
it, and far  
bay, by which  
for her,  
to get in

Camarones, and Vitor) I had a sight of the head-land of Arica, and the island of Guano, with a ship at anchor on the northern side of it, and saw the Mercury standing out of the bay, by which I judged the ship was too warm for her, and therefore made all possible haste to get in to her with my own ship.

A. D.  
1720.



S E C T.

A. D.

1720.



## S E C T. V.

*Arrival in the road of Arica, in the latitude of twenty-eight degrees, twenty minutes South, on the coast of Peru, and transactions there.*


 HEN I came into the port, I found this ship was already taken, and that the Mercury only went accidentally adrift. This prize was called the Rosario, of about one hundred tons, and laden with Cormorants dung, which the Spaniards call Guana, and is brought from the island of Iquique, for the culture of the Agi, or Cod-pepper, in the vale of Arica. There was no white face in her but the pilot, whom I sent to see if her owners would ransom her. At seven in the morning I received a letter verbally translated as follows,

Arica,

My  
 ' BY  
 ' your  
 ' and th  
 ' I woul  
 ' hands,  
 ' it, for  
 ' any m  
 ' you th  
 ' ty, lea  
 ' whom  
 ' our L  
 ' have  
 ' depen  
 ' tute,  
 ' but C  
 ' and  
 ' I bef  
 ' whic  
 ' if I  
 ' com  
 ' aco,



Arica, February the  
16th, N. S. 1720.

My good Sir,

**B**Y the mouth of some of the people  
‘ belonging to my ship, I am told that  
‘ your honour would have me ransom her,  
‘ and that, if not, you would burn her. Now  
‘ I would willingly come abroad to kiss your  
‘ hands, but the governour will not permit  
‘ it, for he stands more for his honour than  
‘ any money: upon this supposition I send  
‘ you this letter to acquaint you of my pover-  
‘ ty, leaving it to your honour’s pleasure, to  
‘ whom I send to know, swearing by God,  
‘ our Lord, that I am an honest man, and  
‘ have a great family to maintain, and other  
‘ dependances, so that I shall be left desti-  
‘ tute, and can expect no favour from any  
‘ but God, and after that from the clemency,  
‘ and generosity of your heart, from which  
‘ I beseech once, and many times, all mercy  
‘ which belongs to your noble nation. But  
‘ if I must ransom, I will do all I can, and  
‘ come to you at the port of Hilo, or at Gu-  
‘ aco, which is nearer, where I will meet  
‘ you

A. D.

1720.

‘ you with what refreshments I can; for here  
 ‘ I doubt it cannot be done. I expect a fa-  
 ‘ vourable result, that I may do all in my  
 ‘ power.

I am, &c.

MIGUEL DIEZ GONZALES.

Soon after the receipt of this, we took a vessel of about ten tons, as she was coming into the road with a cargo of dried fish and Guana within a mile of the town. The country people being by this time alarmed, repaired hither in considerable numbers, and seemed to me, at the distance we were at, to be well mounted and armed. They made a regular appearance, and always guarded the landing place, though it is impracticable for European boats to put on shore there. I was however determin'd to make a trial of their courage by cannonading both them and their town, and made a shew of landing in the Mercury and launch. The cannon balls, grasing on the surface, plow'd up the sand, which flew amongst them; but neither that, nor the likelihood that we should be closer to them

I cannonade  
 the town of  
 Arica with  
 my ship.

A

them in a  
 terror, and  
 move or  
 made the  
 tended as  
 ple, that  
 mies they  
 a Spanish  
 ly stood on

As soon  
 had wrote  
 himself, a  
 be a man  
 circumstan  
 his ship, an  
 hundred  
 that I wou  
 might be  
 punctual  
 next night  
 one thous  
 ingots of  
 call Pinna  
 which I  
 This gent  
 English c  
 for them,  
 ly supply'

them in a few minutes, struck any apparent terror among them, they not offering once to move or to stir; so that I wished I had not made the experiment, which I chiefly intended as an encouragement to my own people, that they might see what cowardly enemies they had to deal with, being assured by a Spanish prisoner, they would have hardly stood one shot.

As soon as it was dark, the merchant who had wrote to me in the morning, came on board himself, and having reason to believe him to be a man perfectly honest, but straitned in his circumstances, I agreed upon restoring to him his ship, and six negroes, for one thousand five hundred pieces of eight, with this proviso, that I would have every thing out of her that might be useful to us. In short, he was so punctual and expeditious, that at ten of the next night he brought the sum agreed on, viz. one thousand three hundred dollars weight in ingots of virgin silver, which the Spaniards call Pinna, and the rest in pieces of eight; for which I restored him his ship and negroes. This gentleman made a great enquiry after English commodities, and offer'd great prices for them, and complain'd that the French only supply'd them with paltry things and trifles,

for,

The merchant to whom the Rosario belonged came aboard to ransom her, and I agree to restore her to him for 1500 dollars which he brought the next evening.

A. D.  
1720.

for which they ran away with many millions from them, and asked whether all the English merchants were asleep, or grown too rich, or what could be the meaning they never ventured into those seas to trade; for continued he, ' though I now live in a bye corner of ' the world, I know the advantages of traffick ' in most parts; therefore I assure you, ( and I ' believe all the French nation will agree ' with me) that we have the best markets in ' the universe;" and that, notwithstanding their ports were not so open as in other parts of the world, yet they knew how to manage matters very well; and that as their governors were generally Europeans, whose stay in the country seldom exceeded three years, they made use of any means to improve their time, and that there were ways of gaining them so as to make them act as if they were not. Much more he said, but concluded with a reflection on the blindness of the English, who had suffer'd the French Pedlars to carry on uninterruptedly the most considerable branch of commerce in all the world. Before he took his leave, he desired me to carry his ship to sea with me two or three leagues, and then turn her adrift. The intent of this, was to deceive the

the govern  
moreover,  
Hilo, wh  
to the No  
me what  
might be  
privacy.  
off upon  
an embark  
separately  
made fast a  
wood. On  
brandy, and  
fom, which  
was as muc  
part of his  
good parcel  
February  
Arica, and  
placed the  
made a very  
bout half a  
not be less  
The city  
famous for  
tinually shi  
dwindled as  
other than a

A. D.,  
1720.

the governor and the king's officers. He moreover, told me, if I would meet him at Hilo, which was about twenty-five leagues to the Northwestward, he would purchase of me what little merchandise we had, which might be done there with all imaginable privacy. The master of the bark too came off upon a Balfe, which is an odd sort of an embarkation made of two large seal-skins, separately blown up like bladders, and then made fast and joined together by a frame of wood. On this he brought off two jarrs of brandy, and forty pieces of eight for his ransom, which considering his mean appearance, was as much as I could have expected. One part of his freight was valuable, which was a good parcel of most excellent dried fish.

February the ninth, 1720. I sailed from Arica, and as I went out, the inhabitants, <sup>I sail from</sup> Arica, placed themselves round the bay, and made a very good hedge fire after me for about half an hour. I judged there could not be less than five or six hundred of them.

The city of Arica, which was formerly so famous for the great quantities of plate continually shipp'd off there, is now much dwindled as to riches, and appears to be no other than a heap of ruins, except the church <sup>City of Arica</sup> described. of

A. D.  
1720.

of St. Mark, and two or three more, which look tolerably well. What helps to make it look the more disconsolate is that the houses are low, and covered only with mats. This town being seated on the edge of the sea, in an open road, has no fortification of any kind to defend it, or command the anchoring place. They think it sufficient that nature has provided for their security by the great breach of the sea, and the rocky bottom near the shore, which denies all access, and threatens inevitable destruction to any European boat, that is not contrived for the purpose. There has formerly been a fort on the top of what they call the headland of Arica, which is very high, and which commanded both the town and the road, but nothing of that now remains but two or three ruin'd walls. They are here very subject to violent earthquakes. They had particularly one, which so agitated the sea in the year 1605, that it overflow'd and bore down the greatest part of the town; but being now situated a little farther backward, and on a rising ground, they are not apprehensive of a like accident for the future. For a more particular account of this earthquake, &c. see Frezier, page 150, of the English translation.

tion. T  
shipping  
island of  
tom of t  
being co  
fensive  
southwa  
day. V  
an ooze  
Guana b  
two mil

The  
at presen  
in cultiv  
Codpepp  
the help  
they feto  
latitude  
south.  
ing, as i  
of vast f  
ed by  
the leas  
vale of  
foremen  
two mil  
it dimin  
value of

tion. There is little or nothing to shelter the shipping in the road here, except the small island of Guana, which is situated at the bottom of the headland of Arica, both of which being covered with birds dung, are very offensive when the wind blows fresh from the southward, which is commonly the case all day. We anchored in ten fathom water, on an oozy bottom; the body of the island of Guana bearing of us south and by west, distant two miles.

The chief riches of the inhabitants at present, are derived from their industry in cultivating the Agi, or, as we call it, Codpepper, which they could not do but for the help of the Guana, or birds dung, which they fetch from the Island of Iquique, in the latitude of nineteen degrees and forty minutes south. The country of itself is barren, being, as it were, made up of continued chains of vast sandy mountains, perpetually parched by the heat of the sun. There is not the least verdure to be seen, except in the vale of Arica itself, where they plant the forementioned spice, and this vale is not above two miles wide next to the sea, from whence it diminishes as it runs up the country. The value of the produce of this spot of ground

A. D.  
1720.

is almost incredible ; as they supply a great part of Peru, and Chili, with Agi, of which there is an universal demand, it being eaten in great quantities by people of all ages in these great kingdoms. But for a more particular account of the manner of managing this, and other curiosities relating to this place, I must beg leave to refer you to Frezier's voyage p. 152, of the English translation.

*Voyage continued.*

We arrive in the road of Hilo, where the French ship which was with us at St. Catherines protects three Spanish ships from me.

To return to our voyage. As soon as I had got out of Arica, I shaped my course for the road of Hilo, which we had a sight of the next day, at three in the afternoon, where we saw one large ship, and three small ones at an anchor. The great ship immediately hoisted French colours, and in the end proved to be the Sage Solomon, of forty guns, commanded by mons. Dumain, whom I had left at St. Catherines, and was now resolved to protect the vessels that were with him, and obstruct my coming in. It being dark before I could get into the road, I sent my third lieutenant mons. la Porte, who was a Frenchman, to let him know what we were ; but my officer had no sooner got in-

to

to the  
calling  
that if I  
me.  
to his  
taken S  
there I  
coasts, a  
had gre  
of trad  
could p  
manned  
town, v  
short, hi  
sign'd to  
off shore  
they fire  
me they  
pretty m  
to confu  
thought  
highest d  
to have  
Mercury  
might, w  
this info  
consider  
into a g



A. D.  
1720.

to the ship than they tumbled him out again; calling him Renegade, and sending me word that if I offered to anchor there they would sink me. Mons. la Porte upon this told me, that to his knowledge the French ships had often taken Spanish commissions at such times as there had been English cruisers on these coasts, as a recompence for which service they had great liberties allowed them in the way of trade. He farther assured me, that he could plainly see Mons. Dumain had double manned his ship with the inhabitants of the town, who were partly French, and that, in short, his anchor was a peek, and that he design'd to be with me as soon as the wind came off shore. Whilst we were talking of this, they fired three or four guns at me to shew me they were in readiness. This warmed me pretty much, and I immediately brought to, to consult what was best to be done. I at first thought of shewing my resentment in the highest degree, and imagined it not impossible to have destroy'd him, having converted the Mercury into a brander, or fire ship, who might, without any great difficulty, have roasted this insolent Frenchman. But upon a second consideration, I began to see it must run us into a great many inconveniences, for be-

A. D

1720.

The People  
receive their  
moiety of  
what we took  
at Arica.

ing at peace with his nation, notwithstanding the unwarrantable breach he made of it, disputes might have risen about it in Europe; therefore laying aside all thoughts of such an enterprize, I clapped the helm a-weather, and stood out to sea again.

Friday, February twelfth, in the morning the ship's company had their moiety of the money taken at Arica, divided amongst them, according to their number of shares.

On Monday, February the twenty-second, I came a-breast of Callao, the port for Lima, which is the metropolis of Peru; but it being calm I furl'd all my sails to prevent their perceiving us from the shore. The next morning the rocks called by the Spaniards, *Farellones de los Piscadores*, or the Fishermens rocks bore of us west north west, distant six leagues, and at noon the island of Galero bore east by south, distant five leagues. We were now almost in sight of Callao, which might have been of bad consequence to us. There is a general order, that all ships coming in sight of this place are to go in, and give an account of themselves, upon pain of the forfeiture of ship and cargoe; so that if any sail passes by without obeying this injunction, they presently conclude her to be a cruiser, and

and the  
embarg  
ward,  
they co  
when t  
are dire  
my.  
forming  
nothing  
the nigh  
of wind  
Febru  
Mercury  
capt. Ha  
fed to m  
till we h  
in about  
same tim  
from Lin  
fide; tha  
veral go  
commerc  
fels, whi  
there cou  
great qu  
would h  
this time  
consideri

and the country thereupon is advised of it. An embargoe is laid on all shipping to the northward, and some of their men of war, which they commonly keep in readines, especially when they have any enemies on their coast, are directly sent out in quest as of an enemy. There being no great prospect of performing much in our present station, I had nothing to do but to slip away from hence in the night, by the help of a favourable breeze of wind.

February the twenty-sixth, the officers in the Mercury desired to be relieved, and it being capt. Hatley's turn to go in her, he proposed to me that he might continue along shore, till we had got the length of Lobos, an island in about seven degrees of south latitude. At the same time he informed he, he had travelled from Lima to Payta by land along the sea-side; that in his journey he went through several good towns, which have a valuable commerce with the city of Lima in small vessels, which are sometimes very rich; and that there could be no doubt of his meeting with great quantity of provisions at least, which would have been a very acceptable article at this time. I could not but approve of this, considering the probability there was of his

A. D.

1720.

A. D.  
1720.

meeting with the Panama ships too, who are always in with the shore, in the evening, to receive the benefit of the land winds, which reign all night, and a great part of the morning. Every body being mightily pleased with this account of Hatley's, I added to their compliment of men, and gave them a month's provisions, and mounted two of our quarter-deck guns on the Mercury, and lent capt. Hatley my pinnace; and besides furnished him with a copy of my commission, with full orders and instructions, though it was more than likely I should have frequent fights of him between our separation, and the place of rendezvous, which was to be at the island of Lobos, which was not above sixty leagues from us. As soon as every thing was ready for their departure, capt. Betagh whose duty and turn it was to relieve the marine officer, in the Mercury, being unwilling to go on this party, addressed himself to the people, and with a fearful countenance told them, that he, and the rest that were to go with him, were sent for a sacrifice, to be sold and sacrificed, with a great many other expressions tending to create a general mutiny. I now imagined no less than that he was about to act what he had threatened when he told me,

it

it shou  
therefo  
violenc  
pany, a  
' what  
' this u  
' had n  
' the o  
' had th  
' if the  
' lar pe  
' and if  
' to go  
a word,  
were of  
with on  
tained a  
contrary  
commaa  
done, I  
acquaint  
had ma  
if any c  
being so  
a huzza  
neer, a  
intended  
Hatley

it should be a short voyage with me, and therefore having prepared myself against any violence, I addressed myself to the ship's company, and told them, that, ' I did not know ' what this ungovernable fellow meant by ' this uproar, and appealed to them all if it ' had not been customary with me to relieve ' the officers in this manner ever since we had ' had this vessel in company, and asked them ' if they ever heard me call upon any particular person by name to go on any enterprize, ' and if I had not left it to every man's choice ' to go out of the ship upon any service." I in a word, desired to know who amongst them were of Betagh's opinion? their answer was with one voice, that they had never entertained any such thought; but that on the contrary, I should find them obedient to any commaads I should lay upon them. This done, I ordered the Mercury along side, and acquainted her crew with the speech Betagh had made in the ship, and desired to know if any of them were under apprehensions of being sold or sacrificed; at which they sat up a huzza, and a loud hoot at the restless mutineer, and begged that they might go on the intended cruise in the Mercury. Accordingly Hatley and Betagh went on board of her,

A. D.  
1720.

An account  
of the prizes  
the Mercury  
took whilst  
she cruised in  
shore.

and putting off from us, gave me three cheers, and stood right in for the land, in the latitude by observation of ten degrees, nine minutes south.

I think it will not be altogether improper here to take some notice of their proceedings which were very extraordinary, after they left me, as I have since been inform'd of them by themselves, and by prisoners. The very next day after they departed from me, they took a small bark laden with rice, chocolate, wheat, flour, and the like. The day following they took another. On the fourth day of their absence they became masters of a ship of near two hundred tons, worth one hundred and fifty thousand pieces of eight. Flushed with this success, it seems, Betagh prevailed on Hatley, and the greatest part of the people with them, not to join with me again, telling them there was sufficient for themselves to appear like gentlemen with as long as they lived; but that it would be nothing when the owners part was taken out, and the remainder divided into five hundred shares. What is more (continued he) we expect to meet with the success every day, and then it is ten to one but they will take all from us; and therefore he thought, since fortune had been so kind to them, they would be highly to blame if they did not lay hold

hold of t  
they had  
could wi  
piness, i  
man am  
was dou  
them ov  
lands of  
and they  
dezvous.  
self the v  
perils of  
what trea  
were his  
mind ho  
dealt wit  
commiff  
lofs what  
was weig  
hovering  
away wi  
to the e  
so pyrat  
gang stil  
in the e  
to leave  
clapped  
a sail sta

A. D.

1720.

hold of this opportunity and go to India, since they had provisions and every thing else they could wish for in their voyage, and the happiness, into the bargain, of having a gentleman amongst them, (viz. capt. Hatley) who was doubtless navigator enough to conduct them over to some of the coasts and islands of Asia. This was soon resolved on, and they fell to leeward of our place of rendezvous. But Hatley pondering within himself the vast lengths to be run, and the many perils of the undertaking, and knowing well what treatment he should meet with in India, were his treachery discovered; and calling to mind how capt. ~~Chippen~~ was said to have been dealt with, when he ran away with Dampier's commission, and one of his prizes, he was at a loss what he had best do in the case. While he was weighing all this within himself, and still hovering on the coast, some of his crew went away with his boat, to surrender themselves to the enemy, rather than be concerned in so pyritical an action. But Betagh, and his gang still kept Hatley warm with liquor, and in the end, brought him to a fixed resolution to leave these seas: but no sooner had they clapped their helm a-weather, than they saw a sail standing towards them, which, in short, proved

The Mercury  
taken by a  
Spanish man  
of war.

A. D.  
1720.

proved to be a Spanish man of war, who caught them, and put an end to their India voyage. The English were treated very indifferently, but Betagh, it seems who was of their religion, and of a nation which the Spaniards affect to be fond of, was made an officer, and used very respectfully. This he certainly deserved at their hands; for he gave them an account of the whole scheme of our voyage, and not only informed them of what we had done, but also of what I designed to do, so that they did not doubt but I myself should be in their hands very speedily; and indeed I was told Betagh modestly desired of his new captain that whenever they met with me, he might have the honour of entering me the first, to board me, and to shew an example to such as should follow him. The sequel will shew how providentially I was delivered from them.

Arrival in the  
road of Gu-  
anchaco  
where we take  
an empty ship  
call'd the Car-  
mesita. The  
prisoners in  
her give me  
advise of a  
rich ship ly-  
ing at Pata.

Monday, February the twenty ninth. At six in the morning the headland of Guanapo bore east and by south, and at seven we saw a sail at anchor in the road of Guanchaco; at eleven we came up and anchored along side of her. There was no body on board of her but two Indian men and a boy. She was called the Carmesita, of about one hundred tons, and had

had n  
Guay  
these  
rich  
had p  
sustain  
imme  
the an  
took n  
well f  
I nam  
have n  
the M  
chief  
pose.

I c  
land,  
and C  
vessel  
shot o  
and  
my fi  
(in th  
been  
beach  
if I r  
into  
haul



A. D.

1720.

had nothing in her but a little timber from Guayaquil, from whence she lately came. By these prisoners I was informed, there was a rich ship in the cove of Payta, where she had put in to repair some damages she had sustained by a gale of wind. Upon which I immediately went to sea; but, in purchasing the anchor, the cable parted, and I lost it. I In purchasing the anchor, the cable parted. took my prize with me, she being new and well fitted, and promised to sail very well. I named her the St. David, and designed to have made her a compleat fire-ship as soon as the Mercury should join us; for she had the chief matter on board of her for that purpose.

I coasted it at a small distance from the land, and the next day looked into Malabriga The next day chase a small vessel ashore. and Cheripe, from whence I chased a small vessel, who, when I came within half cannon shot of her, suddenly got her tacks on board, and stood in for the land, and received all my fire. I thought I was sure of her, not (in the least) apprehending they would have been so hardy as to run themselves on a beach, where the sea breaks mountains-high, if I may use that sea phrase. I followed her into shoal water, and then was obliged to haul off with my ship, and send the launch after

after her; but before they could come near her, (to my great astonishment) ashore she went, and was to pieces in a moment; notwithstanding which I believe most of those in her were saved, they being admirable swimmers in all these parts.

*Arrival at the Islands of Lobos.*

**T**HE next morning, at six of the clock, I found myself within three leagues of the island of Lobos de la Mar, so called from there being two islands which go by the name of Lobos, near one another, but the other being much nearer the land, is called for distinction sake, Lobos de Tierra. The first of these was our appointed place of rendezvous with the Mercury; but standing into the road, and not seeing her, I sent Mr. Randall, the second lieutenant, with two crosses to be set up over two bottles to be buried in the beach, each of which contained a letter to captain Hatley, as follows.

To captain Simon Hatley.

S I R,

**I** Have in company a ship I took out of the road of Guanchaco, who gives  
cer-

A. D.  
1720.

‘ certain advice of a rich ship lying at Payta;  
‘ therefore I make the best of my way thi-  
‘ ther, desiring you’ll make no stay here;  
‘ there will I cruise till you join us, which  
‘ you must do with all the expedition you  
‘ can before Guayaquil is alarmed. I hear  
‘ captain Clipperton has taken several ships  
‘ on this coast, and we are told there are two  
‘ Spanish men of war to leeward. Observe  
‘ that the ship I have in company has no top-  
‘ gallant-fails, and that I have added a mizen  
‘ top-gallant-sail to our ship.

‘ If we are obliged to leave Payta, which  
‘ I will not do without the greatest necessity,  
‘ you will find us at one of the places you  
‘ mentioned, or at point Arena, where your  
‘ ships (the Duke and Dutchess) formerly  
‘ lay, expecting the most expeditious dispatch  
‘ you can make. Yesterday I chased a small  
‘ vessel on shore, which came out of the road  
‘ of Cheripe, which I take to be an advice-  
‘ boat, which gives me hopes we shall make  
‘ some hand of it at Payta.

S I R,

I am, &c.

Geo. Shelvocke, *Sen.*  
The

A. D.  
1720.

The bottles were buried, and the crosses were set up, not thinking at that time to what little purpose, or that we were never to see the Mercury more.

*Description of the Isles of Lobos.*

THESE islands situated in about seven degrees of south latitude, within sight of the continent, look, when beheld from the sea, like continued rocks; there is not the least verdure to be seen upon them, and when you are on shore, the ground is burnt up to that degree, that the surface of it appears like one continued cinder. Here are on the beach great numbers of seals, of a much larger size than those at Juan Fernandes. They smell very nauseously, and are of a much fiercer nature, and not so easily to be driven away from you, as at the abovementioned place. Here are also plenty of Guanoes and carrion-crows, which, with their red gills, as they sit perching among the rocks, bear the exact resemblance of a Turkey; and here also is plenty of a certain fowl, not much unlike a Teal, and so tame as to suffer my people to knock them down with their hats. As to the island itself, we saw nothing worth notice, except that the

the harbour, which lies north west and by west, and south east and by east, is a convenient place to careen in, but affords neither wood nor water. Here is a spacious rocky cave, the retreat of the seals, whose continual howlings ecchoing all around the obscure grotto, render it a place of as much horror as the imagination of man can well feign.

Having now done every thing necessary to direct the Mercury in joining us again, I continued coasting to the northward, till I had got a-breast of the island, called Lobos de Payta, from its proximity to the port of that name; which was on March the eighth. From hence I sent Mr. Randall, the second lieutenant, in the launch to discover the situation of the cove of Payta, and, under the covert of night, to see if there were any ships there, as I could not venture in with the ship in the dark; but it proving wet rainy weather, a thing so uncommon on the coasts of Peru, that the Spaniards affirm it never rains there, they could perceive nothing like a town. They had a negroe with them who had been at Payta several times, who said he was sure we had got to the wrong place. Upon this every one agreed, that the highest land we saw to the northward of us was the saddle of Payta, which

Departure  
from the is-  
lands of Lo-  
bos

A. D.  
1720.

which in the end we found to be the Sierra, or highland of Motapa, but it was too late that we were convinced of this mistake; for we could not hinder ourselves from being driven by the wind and current so far to the northward of cape Blanco, as to cost us twelve tedious days to regain the ground we lost in three hours.



S E C T.



## S E C T. VI.

*Arrival in the cove of Payta, on the coast of Peru; an account of our transactions there, particularly of our taking the town of Payta, and engaging with the Spanish Admiral in that harbour.*

MONDAY, March the twenty-first,  
M I came up with the point of Parina, seven leagues to the northward of Payta, and then steered as directly as the wind would permit us for Payta. At three in the afternoon, we saw the Pena Oradado, or the *Hole in the rock*; and in an hour afterwards we entered the cove of Payta with French colours flying. There we found a small ship at anchor with her Foremast out, and her main-topmast unrigged. Upon the first sight of us they sent a boat from the shore to her; for which reason my launch was manned, and sent under the command  
O of

- A. D. 1720. of Mr. Brooks, my first lieutenant, to hinder them from carrying any thing of value from on board of her, to the town. They soon returned, having left the agent and five more in possession of this ship. They found nothing in her but timber, and a little jerked beef. I came to an anchor in seven fathom water, about three quarters of a mile from the town, but was obliged to leave the *St. David* to cruize off the Saddle of Payta, she having no anchors with her to come to with. The taking of this town being considered in the scheme of our voyage, as a matter of great importance, I consulted with my officers, concerning the properest methods of going about it. The place appeared to be indifferently large and populous, and it was very probable there might be some land forces to defend a place so well known as this, which is the rendezvous of most ships coming from Panama and Callao. However, I landed with forty-six men, at two of the clock the next morning, leaving Mr. Coldsea, the master, and some others, not only to look after the negroes we had, who ought not to be trusted with the ship by themselves, but also to bring the ship nearer in, that we might the more expeditiously embark the plunder we might get

get  
up  
opp  
tire  
ligh  
on t  
wh  
hav  
mar  
fore  
hand  
me c  
befo  
he h  
injur  
inha  
reme  
amo  
fure  
piec  
vern  
had  
of it  
mor  
did.  
I ha  
and  
thor



A. D.

1720.

get here. Being now on shore, I marched up to the great church without meeting any opposition, and indeed I found the town entirely deserted by the inhabitants. At daylight we saw what seemed great bodies of men on the hills, on each side of us, who I expected when they had viewed our strength, would have paid us a visit; but I found that as we marched up towards them, we drove them before us. All this time no prisoners fell into our hands, but an old Indian and a boy, who told me captain Clipperton had been here some time before, to set some prisoners on shore, and that he had assured them, he would do them no injury, nor give them any trouble. But the inhabitants not thinking fit to trust him, had removed all their effects up to the mountains, amongst which was part of the king's treasure, amounting to four hundred thousand pieces of eight, in the possession of the governor. This would have been a fine booty, had captain Clipperton been willing to accept of it. It is likely he would have met with no more difficulty, in subduing this place, than I did. But suddenly, upon hearing a gun fired, I halted, and sent to know the meaning of it, and word was brought me, our ship was on shore. This made me hurry off with some

A. D.

1720.

precipitation, carrying off with us the Union-flag, which I had caused to be planted in the church yard ever since sun-rising, and as we re-imbarked, the enemy came running down the hills, hollowing and crying out after us. When I came on Board, I found our ship entirely afloat, but within her breadth of the rocks; and the water being smooth, I soon warped her off again. Having secured our ship again, we returned to take possession of the town in the same manner as before, and the Spaniards very peaceably retired up to the hills again. The reason of this accident with the ship, was, that the master having weighed the anchor before day-light, and having but little wind, was caught astays, and whilst he was endeavouring to fill his sails again, it suddenly fell calm, so that he was almost on shore, before he could drop an anchor to prevent it. But this being happily over, the remainder of the day was spent in shipping off what plunder we had got, which consisted of hogs, fowls, brown and white calavances, beans, Indian corn, wheat, flour, sugar, and as much cocoa-nut as we were able to stow away, with pans, and other conveniencies for preparing it, so that we were supplied with breakfast-meat for the whole voyage, and full of provisions

vifions of one kind or other. In the afternoon there came to us, a messenger to know what I would take for the ransom of the town and ship; to which I answered, I would have ten thousand pieces of eight, and those to be paid in twenty-four hours, if they intended to save the town, or ship either. At eight the next morning, I received a letter from the governour, signifying that mine being wrote in French, he, nor any about him, could understand the contents of it; but that if I would let him know my demands in Latin or Spanish, I should not fail of a satisfactory answer. In the afternoon I sent one of the quarter-deck guns ashore, which being mounted at our guard, was fired at sun-set, midnight, and break of day.

Betimes the next morning the messenger returned with an answer (together with the Captain of the ship in the road) to mine of yesterday. Upon hearing of their arrival, I went on shore to treat with them; but the Governour gave me to understand, in plain terms, that he neither could, nor would ransom the town, and did not care what I did with it, so that I spared the Churches: but I threatned that the town should be reduced to ashes without any regard to Churches, or

A. D.  
1720.

any thing else ; though I never designed to destroy any place reserved to sacred uses ; and at the same time the Spanish captain had notice given to him, that if he had an inclination to save his ship from the flames, he must ransom her without delay ; which he promised to do in three hours. But all this while they were sensible of the storm which was ready to overtake us, and had seen their admiral, who in the night had got close under the high land, within a league of the entrance of the Cove, which our look-outs could not discover, till he was within gun-shot of our ship. But to return to my subject, having received this negative answer, and got every thing that might be any ways serviceable to us out of the town, I instantly ordered it to be set on fire in two or three places ; and the houses, being extremely dry, consumed away apace. But no sooner was Payta in a blaze, than those on board of us made signals for me to come off, and kept incessantly firing towards the mouth of the harbour. Upon which I ordered all hands off, and went first on board myself in a canoe, with three men only, and before I had got half way off, saw a large ship lying with her fore-top-sail aback, and with a Spanish

flag

A. D.

1740.

flag flying at her fore-top-mast-head. At this prospect, two of my three people were ready to sink, and had it not been for my boatswain I should not have been able to fetch our ship. When I looked back on the town, I could not forbear wishing that I had not been so hasty; for I could not imagine the admiral would have been so imprudent as he was in lying so long by as he did; for had he held his way, he might have been on board of the *Speedwell* long enough before I could, and have taken possession of her without any to resist him but eight or nine white faces, and twelve negroes. Here I cannot in justice pass over the signal service which Mr. Coldsea, the master, did at this time, to whose conduct it was owing that we had not an immediate end put to our voyage; for as the admiral was coming in upon us with all his sails spread, Mr. Coldsea, by the assistance of the few on board with him, fired at him so smartly, that he stopped the enemy's career. The Spaniard did not expect such a warm reception; and therefore apprehending he should have hot work with us, brought his ship to, that he might put himself into a very unnecessary condition of making a vigorous attack upon us. This inactivity of the enemy gave me a fine

O 4

opportunity

A, D, 1720. opportunity of reaching on board my ship, which I had no sooner done, than I directed them in clearing the ship, which was partly done already, and loosing all the sails, and making all other requisite preparations both to receive, and deceive the Admiral. In the mean time my officers on shore, being unwilling to leave the gun behind them which we had mounted in the town, were so long before they could get it into the boat, that I was afraid the Spaniard would attack us, before the launch would be able to row on board of us. But he was not in such a hurry, thinking that I could not well pass by him, and therefore he suffered my men to come off, who were about fifty in number, but was within pistol shot of us before they had all got into the ship; upon which, we cut our cable, and our ship falling the wrong way, I had but just room enough to fill clear of him. Being now close by one another, his formidable appearance struck an universal damp on every one's spirits. Some of my people in coming off, were for jumping into the water, and swimming to shore, as one actually did. But now when they saw a fine Europe built ship of fifty guns, along side, the disproportion was so great between us, that there could be no hopes of escaping him.

him. Being under his lee, I endeavoured to get into shoal water, but he becalmed and confined me for the greatest part of an hour, handling me very roughly with his cannon, but made very little use of his small arms: he never had patience to let us be quite along his side, but whenever he was ready with his fire, he gave his ship the starboard helm, to bring as many of his guns as he could to bear on us, and, all the time, kept me out of the true wind. We failed not to make the briskest returns we could; but the misfortune was, that in the hurry and confusion of getting off from the town, most of our small arms were wet, so that it was late before they were of any use. During this, there was a confused scene on shore, of the town on fire, and the people who had flocked down the hills to extinguish it, some of which answered the end of their coming, whilst others were more earnestly employed in beholding the engagement. I was long in suspense and despair of getting away from the Spaniard, and could foresee nothing but that we should be torn to pieces by him, and longed for an opportunity to try our heels with him, whilst our masts were standing. I expected every minute that he would board us, and upon hearing a shout-

A. D.

1735.

ing

- A. D. 1720. ing amongst them, and seeing their forecassle full of men, for till then I had not seen the head of one, except through the ports, I concluded they had now come to a resolution of entering us; but I presently saw that the occasion of this joy and acclamation was their having shot down our ensign-staff, upon which they, seeing our ensign trailing in the water, were in hopes we had struck: but I soon undeceived them, by spreading a new ensign in the mizen shrouds. Upon sight of this they lay as snug as before, and held their way close upon our quarter; at last, designing to do our business at once, they clapped their helm well a starboard, to bring their whole broad-side to point at us; but their fire had little or no effect. All stood fast with us, and they muzzled themselves; which gave me time both to get a head, and to windward of him, before he could fill his sails again; and now I found, that if our masts, which were by this time but slenderly supported, would bear what sail we had abroad, we should soon steal away from him. After this he was in a great hurry, to get his spritsail-yard fore and aft, threatening us very hard, and plying us with his forechase. But we soon were out of his reach, and all hands were immediately employed



employed in repairing our damages. This ship was called the *Peregrine*, of fifty-six guns, with upwards of four hundred and fifty men on board of her.

During this action, we had not a man killed or wounded, although the enemy often hulled us, and once in particular, a shot coming into one of our ports, dismounted one of our guns between decks, tearing off the nut of the gun, and breaking itself into a great many pieces, which flew fore and aft in the midst of a crowd of people, without hurting any one of them. Our stern was also much shattered, and our rigging much disabled. Our mainmast was a little wounded, yet stood a long while with only one good shroud to support it; our fore-mast fared but little better, yet I kept all the canvas, except the main-top-gallant-sail, at hard bats-end. An unlucky shot took the bow of our launch, as she lay upon the quarter, and set fire to some cartridges of powder, which were negligently left in her, and which blew away her moorings, and we lost her. Seeing a great smoke arise on the quarter, I at first imagined some accident had happened within board. In short, in about three glasses we got quite clear of the admiral who tacked, and stood in

A. D. 1720. in for Payta, and we shortened sail. A narrower escape from an enemy, could not well have been made, considering the vast difference between us, as to force. The Spaniard had fifty-six guns, we, on the contrary, had but twenty mounted; they had four hundred and fifty men, we, on our part, did not exceed seventy-three, and eleven Negroes and two Indians were included in that number. He had farther this great odds over us, of being in a settled readiness, whilst we were in the utmost confusion. As for our small arms they were wet and useless to us; and what is more, in the midst of the engagement, one third of my people, instead of fighting, were hard at work to make farther preparation for an obstinate resistance, if we had been pushed to extremities; and particularly the carpenter and his crew were busied in making ports for stern chase, which, as it happened, we made no use of. Upon the whole, we had the good fortune to escape this danger, which was the more to be dreaded, because, as we had set fire to the town, they were probably exasperated upon the account of the churches, which I never intended to destroy, and if I had fallen into their hands, they might have given us but uncomfortable quarters. At the  
best

A. D.

1720.

best, however, it could not but be allowed to have been a most unfortunate disaster. The loss of my boat and anchor was irrevocable, and may be said to be the cause of that scene of trouble, which will take up the remainder of this narrative ; for we had now but one anchor, that at Payta being the third we had lost, and were besides entirely destitute of a boat of any kind.

I have been since informed, we placed some of our shot very well, and that we killed and wounded several of the enemy.

But to return to what we have more immediately to say, at five the same evening we saw a sail under our lee-bow, which I took to be the prize we had left to cruise for us near the Saddle of Payta ; and we therefore stood to the Westward all night, and the next morning we saw two sail a-stern of us. I tacked, and stood towards them, and in a little time could see that one of them was standing in for Payta, while the other kept stemming with us ; but the nearer I approached her, the less I liked her, and could not but think it advisable to put my ship about, and crowd sail from her. However, she gained upon us, and advanced near enough to shew us she was the Brilliant, the admiral's consort. She was

A. D. 1720. a French built ship of thirty-six guns, manned with people of that nation, and other Europeans. She was handsomely rigged, which is rare to be seen in these parts, and sailed almost two foot for our one; so that, notwithstanding we had almost a calm all the heat of the day, she would come near us apace, upon every little breeze that arose. But night coming on, I made use of the old stratagem (I thought it might be new here) of turning a light adrift, in a half tub, instead of a boat, darkening one part of the lanthorn, that it might the more appear to be a ship's light, and then immediately altered my course. As the day broke, I handed all my sails, and in full day-light could perceive nothing of the enemy. This was the ship wherein B—gh, my late captain of marines, was so much respected, and by his advice it was, as I have been told, that the admiral ordered his consort to ply up to windward to Lobos, our first place of rendezvous, whilst he himself came to Payta in search of us. This separation, though intended as a sure means to catch us, proved to be very fortunately the means of our preservation.

Being thus closely pursued, I took an offing of thirty leagues from the shore, and then brought

brought to, to consider of the unhappy state we were then involved in. Having weighed every thing very maturely within myself, our circumstances seemed to me to be in quite a melancholy posture. I was still in the dark, as to knowing how, and where I might meet with the Success, my comfort. An embargo, as I was told at Payta, was laid on all shipping to leeward for the term of six months, and our prize, which I designed to make a fire-ship of, was taken by the Brilliant, as I could too plainly discover. The consequence of all this must be, that the enemy would learn from her people all our places of rendezvous, and, as much as they could inform them of our farther designs. This alone might have been sufficient to break in upon all the measures we had proposed to take; and since I had but one anchor, and no boat at all, the views I had at the town of Guayaquil were vanished. There, if I had not met with Clipperton, I proposed to make some attempt, having been advised that several great ships of value lay up that river under an embargo. I had on board of me an old Indian Pilot, who had lived there many years, and who merrily told me, that I should be sure to find the Inhabitants ready, but, continued he, it will be to

A. D. 1720. to run away. This project would have certainly been attended with some profitable event, if the Mercury had joined me in any reasonable time. Her absence, therefore, gave me vast uneasiness, being ignorant of what could be become of her.

In the midst of all this peril and perplexity, I called my officers together, to let them know, it was my opinion we had, as we were thus circumstanced, a much better prospect to the windward than to the leeward; not only for the reason before observed, but especially because of the embargo hereabouts, and the necessity they were under of trading to Chili. That on that coast we should not be in the least suspected, and should, at the same time, in the most effectual manner, escape the enemy's men of war, who would doubtless be in quest of us, very strictly to the leeward, while we should be safe to windward, and have the whole coast of Chili to range on; that the enemy would be so far from the thoughts of pursuing us to the Southward, that it would appear to them as the highest improbability we should ever beat up six or seven hundred leagues to windward, merely for the sake of water at Juan Ferrandes, which was all they might imagine we had

had in design, though after a supply of it, we might cruise out the whole season off the ports of Conception, Valparaíso and Coquimbo, where among the shipping, we might be stocked with anchors, cables, boats, and a vessel to make a fire-ship of, on which I mightily depended, as I could foresee but little probability of ever joining with the Success again. I proposed also before I left the coast of Chili, to make myself master of the town of la Serena, or Coquimbo; all this being universally approved of, we got our tacks on board, and stretched away to windward.

A. D.

1720.

Come to a  
resolution of  
returning to  
the coast of  
Chili.

My intentions after this, were fixed upon the coast of Mexico. There I proposed to run the height of the Tres Marias and California, as the most likely places to meet with the Success at. These two places would have been commodious, the first for salting of turtle, and the last for wooding and watering at. In those parts I should also be ready, in the season, to lay myself in the track of the Manila ship, which, if I should have had the fortune to meet with, and, having a fire-ship with me, I would have tried what I could have done with her. If I had failed of success in this, I must have contented myself with cruising on the Peruvian ships, which bring silver to Acapulco,

P

to

A. D. 1720. to purchase the Indian and Chinese commodities, which the Manila ship conveys with her to that port. But these designs were never executed but in the imagination, for every league we sailed, we approached still nearer to that catastrophe, which put an end to all thoughts of these designs, and changed the face of our affairs, from that of a ship as well governed as could be hoped for in so remote a part, and on such an adventure as we were engaged in, to a scene of mutiny, confusion and uproar.

Saturday, March the twenty-sixth, having well secured our masts, and bent a new suit of sails, we stood to the southward, expecting to gain our passage to windward in about five weeks.

Monday, March the twenty-eighth, the carpenter began to build a boat to water the ship with, when we should get to Juan Fernandes.

Discover a dangerous leak.

Thursday, March the thirty-first, as they were pumping the ship, the water, which came out of the well, was not only in greater quantity than usual, but was also as black as ink. This made me judge that some water had got to our powder, and accordingly going into the powder-room, we heard the water come



A. D.

1720.

come in like a little sluice. This had quite spoiled the greatest part of our powder; so that we only saved the quantity of six barrels, which I ordered to be stowed away in the bread-room. It pleased God that we had then fair weather, for otherwise it would have been a hard matter for us to have kept ourselves above water. We found a leak to be on the bow, under the lower cheek of the head, occasioned by a shot which had been lodged there, in our late engagement, and which falling out by the working of the ship in an head sea, had left room for a stream of water; but we brought the ship by the stern, and, with great difficulty, stopped it securely.

At this time we had a large stock of provisions to subsist on, and every one lived as well as he could have wished. Each man had a quart of chocolate, and three ounces of very good rusk, to breakfast on, every morning; and fresh meat, or fresh fish every day. Of this latter we had such a plenty about the ship, that we could almost always take our choice of dolphin or albicore, to supply us at our meals.

A. D.

1720.

*Second arrival at the island of Juan  
Fernandes.*

MAY the sixth, we made the westernmost of the islands of Juan Fernandes, the body of it bearing North East and by North, distant twelve leagues; and the day after, the carpenters compleated the boat, which was big enough to carry three hogsheds. On the eleventh, we saw the great island of Juan Fernandes, bearing East half South. By observation, the body of it lies in the latitude of thirty-three degrees, twenty-five minutes, South. Here I plied on and off till the twenty-first, but could not get off as much water as we daily expended. This made me think of anchoring in the road for a few hours; and in order to it, I prepared twenty tons of casks to raft on shore, and then worked in, and anchored according to the best directions I had, in forty fathom water, and made a warp which was of the length of three hawsers and a half. This was made fast to the rocks to steady the ship, and by this warp, we hauled our raft of casks on shore and on board. The very next morning we were ready to go to sea, but had  
not

not the least opportunity for so doing in four days.

A. D.

1720.

May the twenty-fifth, a hard gale of wind came out of the sea upon us (a thing very uncommon as has been reported) and brought in with it a tumbling swell, so that in a few hours, our cable, which was never wet before, parted, and inevitable shipwreck appeared before our eyes. A dismal accident this, there being no means to be used, or the least prospect to be discerned, of avoiding immediate destruction. But providence interposed in our behalf, so greatly, that if we had struck but a cable's length farther to the eastward, or westward of the place where we did strike, we must inevitably have perished. As soon as our ship touched the rocks, we were obliged to hold fast by some part or other of her, or otherwise the violence of the shocks in striking, might have been full sufficient to have thrown us all out of her into the sea. Our main-mast, fore-mast, and mizen top-mast, went all away together. It is not in the power of words, to express the wretched condition we were now reduced to, or the surprize we were under at the being so unfortunately shipwreck'd, or the dread that came upon us of starving on the uninhabited isle we were thrown upon,

A. D. if we should be so lucky as to escape the sea.  
1720. We had reflections enough wherewith to depress our spirits; but the work we had in hand, which was no less than that of endeavouring to save our lives (which were yet in great suspense) made every body active for his present preservation.

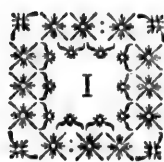


S E C T.



## S E C T. VII.

*An account of the most remarkable transactions and occurrences, during the time of our stay on the island of Juan Fernandes, after we had been shipwreck'd there.*

 T was happy for us that our masts fell all over the off side, which gave us room to make a raft. By this means, and by the help of our hands on shore, who had been there before the wind came on, and who came down on the beach to assist us, we were all saved, except one man. I myself had a very narrow escape. In the midst of this surprize, the first thing I took care of, was my commission; and remembring the powder to be uppermost in the bread-room, I got most of it up, with about seven or eight bags of bread. These we secured to windward, and saved, as the ship did not come to pieces im-

A. D. diately. In a few minutes however, after she  
1720. first struck, she was full of water ; so that the  
surgeon's chest being stowed below, there was  
little or nothing preserved out of that. We  
saved two or three compasses, and some of  
our mathematical instruments and books. Be-  
fore it was quite dark, we were all on shore,  
but in a very wet, uncomfortable condition,  
with no place to have recourse to for shelter,  
from the boisterous wind and rain, except the  
trees which dripped upon us. We had no-  
thing to cheer our spirits after the fatigue and  
hazard of getting from the wreck to the rocks,  
nor any other prospect before us, but that  
after having suffered long and much upon this  
uninhabited place, we might, in process of  
time (or perhaps never) be taken away from  
hence by some ship of some nation or other.  
Our ears were now saluted by the melancho-  
ly howlings of innumerable seals on the beach,  
who lay so thick together, that we were ob-  
liged to clear our way of them as we went a-  
long. Now nothing presented itself to our  
sight, but rocky precipices, inhospitable woods,  
dropping with the rain, lofty hills, whose tops  
were hid by thick and dark clouds, on the one  
hand, and a tempestuous sea, which had re-  
duced us to the forlorn state we were now in,

on

on the other. Here we were, without any one thing necessary for our relief, not so much as a seat whereon to rest our harrassed limbs, except the wet ground, which, as far as we could see, was also like to be our bed and pillow, and indeed, it proved to be so.

In the evening all the officers came to bear me company, and to consult with me, how we should contrive to get some necessaries out of the wreck, and having, by this time, lighted a fire, we wrapt ourselves in what we could get, laid ourselves round it, and notwithstanding the badness of the weather, we slept very soundly; but the next morning, getting up with the first glimpse of day-light, we looked at each other like men awakened out of a dream; so great, and so sudden was the melancholy change in our condition, that we could scarce trust to our senses.

I went immediately among the people to set them about the work we had resolved upon the night before; but they were so scattered, there was no such thing as getting them together; so that all opportunities were lost of regaining any thing, but some of our small arms which were fished up; whereas probably we might have also regained all our beef and pork,

A. D.

1720.

We consult  
upon methods  
of getting  
some necessa-  
ries out of the  
wreck.

could

A. D.  
1720.

could I have prevailed on them to set about their work in earnest. Instead of that they were employed in building huts and tents, and making other preparations to settle themselves here, as for good ; and, in the interim, while they were thus employed, the wreck was entirely destroyed by a furious gale of wind which came on, and every thing in her was lost, except one cask of beef and one of Farina de Pao, which were washed whole on the strand. Thus were our provisions of all kinds, irrecoverably gone, and whatever else might have been of use to us, except what I have already mentioned. I should have observed, that I saved eleven hundred dollars belonging to the gentlemen adventurers, which were kept in my chest in the great cabin ; the rest being in the bottom of the bread-room for security, could not possibly be come at. I need not say how disconsolate my reflections were on this sad accident, which had, as it were, thrown us out from the rest of the world, without any thing to support us, but the uncertain produce of a desolate, uncultivated island, situated (I may justly say) in the uttermost parts of the earth ; and, at least, ninety leagues distant from the continent of Chili, whose Spanish inhabitants have been too remarkable



A. D.  
1720.

markable for their ungenerous treatment of their enemies, and to be treated as such, sooner or later, was what we had chiefly to depend upon. But as such was our case, that no efforts or endeavours were to be wanting in us to mend it; my first thoughts were on the means whereby to preserve our health, and on some scheme of oeconomy to be observed, amongst the people, in relation to the distribution of such quantities of provisions, as should, from time to time, be obtained.

I took some pains in finding out a convenient place where to set up my tent. In this I not only regarded the situation, in respect to the weather, but also the security from being easily surprized by the enemy. At length, I found a commodious spot of ground, about half a mile from the sea, with a fine run of water within a stone's cast of it, on each side, with firing near at hand, and trees proper for our use. The people settled within call about me, in as good a manner, as they could, and having a cold season coming on, some of them thatched their dwellings, and others covered them with the skins of seals and sea-lions, whilst others got up water-buts, and slept in them under the cover

Set up tents,

A. D. 1720. ver of a tree. Having thus secured ourselves as well as possible against the inclemency of the approaching winter, we used to pass our time in the evening, round a great fire before my tent, where my officers in general, usually assembled, employing themselves quietly in roasting craw-fish in the embers. Sometimes they bewailed our unhappy state, sinking into despair; at other times they flattered themselves with hopes that something might yet be done, to set us on float again. But as words alone were not sufficient, I began to think it full time for me to look about me, to see if it was really practicable for us to build such a vessel, as might carry us all off at once from this island. Therefore (as the most proper man) I consulted first with the carpenter, but was astonished at his cold indifference. He answered me, ' he could not make brick without straw,' and walked away from me in a surly humour. From him I went to the armourer, whom I found at the wreck, and asked him what he could do for us, in his way, that might contribute to the building a small vessel for us; to which he answered, that he hoped he could do all the iron-work that was necessary for such a thing; that he had, with much labour, got his bellows out of

I consult with the carpenter, &c. concerning the means to build a small vessel.

of  
spa  
tha  
the  
the  
we  
ear  
loss  
for  
this  
to  
gre  
to  
wif  
this  
wit  
wo  
wo  
the  
the  
or  
sen  
this  
giv  
the  
the  
I m  
wh

A. D.

1720.

of the wreck that morning, with five or six spadoes, which would afford him steel, and that there could be no want of iron along the shore, and that he did not doubt but we should find a great many useful things, when we came to set about a search for them in good earnest, and desired that I would, without loss of time, order some charcoal to be made for him, whilst he sat up his forge. Upon this I called all hands together, and gave it to them, as my opinion, that there was a great shew of probability we should be able to effect what every one had been hitherto wishing for, *viz.* a vessel to transport us from this scene of wretchedness and distress. But withal I gave them to understand that it would undoubtedly be a laborious task, and would require the utmost assistance of all of them; and, to be brief, I put the question to them, Whether we should make a beginning or no? to which they, with one voice, consented, and promised to be very diligent in this important work, and begged of me to give them instructions how to proceed. I then ordered those who were wooding before the ship was lost, to bring in their axes, that I might send them to cut and prepare wood, wherewith to make charcoal, while the rest  
went

A, D, 1720. went down to the wreck to get the bowsprit on shore, of which I designed to make the keel of our intended vessel, and prevailed on the carpenter to go with me to fix on the properest spot or place to build on. In a word, the people found a great many useful materials about the wreck, and, amongst the rest, the top maul, which being made fast to the head of the main mast, was washed on shore, and, though of no small weight, and of iron, would not, at this time, have been exchanged for its weight in gold.

Lay the keel  
of a bark.

So, on June the eighth, we laid the blocks to build upon, and had the bowsprit ready at hand, which the carpenter, for a little while, handled with seeming good temper, but suddenly turning short upon me, as I stood by him, he swore a great oath, and said he would not strike another stroke upon it, ' he truly would ' be no body's slave, and thought himself ' now upon a footing with myself.' This unreasonable exclamation provoked me to use him a little roughly with my cane. However, I was soon convinced, it would be necessary to use gentler methods with him; for I began to apprehend he was prompted to this language, by some of the sad ones amongst us, and therefore I offered him a reward,

ward, and came to an agreement with him, to give him a four pistole piece, as soon as the stem and stern-post were up, and a hundred pieces of eight when the bark was finished; the money to be committed to the keeping of any one he should name, till that time. This done, he went to work on the keel, which was to be thirty foot in length, the breadth of the intended vessel by the beam being to be sixteen foot, with seven foot of depth for the hold. We were very tedious in chalking her out, and met with such difficulties in the woods, before we could get her frame down, that I dreaded we should never be able to surmount them; for as every tree did not afford timber of a fit turn or size wanted, we were obliged sometimes to go a great way from the water-side, in quest of what was for our purpose, and after having cut down a tree, it was to be dragged up steep hills, which, with other fatigues, wearied out the people to a great degree. In two months time, however, we made a tolerable show, which was, owing in a great measure to the diligence and ingenuity of Popplestone, the armourer, who did not lose a minute's time from the the work of his hands, or the contrivance of his head. This assiduity of his,

A. D.

1720.

But was obliged to give the carpenter a sum of money to prevail on him to work.

The armourer proves to be very serviceable.

to

A. D. 1720. to deprive him of none of his merit in other respects, was greatly owing to the just sense he had of our forlorn condition, with which he seemed to be remarkably affected. This man made us a little double-headed maul, hammers, chissels, files, and a sort of gimblets, which performed very well; he even made us a bullet-mould, and an instrument to bore our cartouch-boxes with, which we made of the trucks of the gun carriages, which were washed on shore. These we covered with seals skins, and contrived so as to be both handy and neat. He, upon the whole, had enabled himself to perform any iron-work the carpenter wanted, and did not only do us this service in his way, but began and finished a large serviceable boat, which was what we very much stood in need of.

But I must here leave the work, to inform my reader how we went on in other respects, and here I must observe, that in the beginning, and for a few days, the people behaved themselves very regularly and diligently, half of them working one day, and half another. They began to relish their diet indifferently well, and seemed to be easier and easier under our misfortunes every day. They treated me with as much regard as I could wish for,

for, or desire, and, in a body, thanked me for the prospect they had before them of a deliverance from this place. I, on my part, never failed to encourage them, by adding to such stories of accidents, or actions, as I had heard of, to prevail on them to persevere, and always pressed them to stick close to the work, that we might get the bark ready in time, always assuring them I did not doubt but providence would direct us in the way of some of the trading ships, which we could easily take, and that, to our comfort, we had three of the best ports in Chili, within one hundred and twenty leagues of us. This instilled new life into them, and they often declared, with one voice, they would do their utmost to finish our vessel with all expedition, which was a most agreeable hearing. But the time soon arrived, when, instead of enjoying a little peace and quiet, which was the only blessing we could expect, and be morally certain of, as our affairs stood at that time, we fell into such confusion and outrageous disorder, that it was a miracle we ever got off from this place by any assistance of our own.

The people neglect the work and mutiny.

For after they had gone through the most laborious part of the work, they entirely neglected it, and my officers deserted me, to

Q

herd

A. D. herd with the meanest of the ship's company.  
 1720. I was now confirmed in the suspicion I had had some time before, that there was a black design a kindling, which was now ready to break out into a flame. If I at any time, or by chance, met with any of my officers, if I asked them what they were about, and why they would act so contrary to their duty, as to divert the people from their work? one would answer, he did not know whether he should go off the island or not, if my bundle of boards was ready; and others told me, they did not care how matters went, they truly, could shift for themselves, as well as the rest; and in talking with the meaner sort, some would be furly and say nothing, and others truly would be slaves to nobody, but would willingly do as the rest did; so that it may be easily imagined how I passed my hours at this time.

Upon which to secure my commission in some dry place,  
 I order my commission to be hid. in the woods or rocks, if such could be found. I well remembered how Dampier had been served in these seas. At length I one afternoon, missed all the people, and could see nobody but Mr. Adams, our surgeon, Mr. Hendry, the agent, my son, and  
 Mr.



Mr. Dodd, lieutenant of marines, who, for some reasons, best known to himself, had a mind to act the mad-man. I could not conceive what could be become of them all; but at night I was informed, they had assembled together at the great tree (as they called it) to consult with one another. There they had formed a new regulation, and new articles, whereby they had excluded the Gentlemen Adventurers in England, from having any part of what we should take for the future, and divested me of the authority of their captain, having regulated themselves according to the discipline of Jamaica. The chief officers amongst the rest, had chosen one Morpew (who both made and mended their shoes before the Speedwell was lost) to be their champion and speaker. This man addressed himself to those who were present, to acquaint them, that ‘ they were now their own masters, and servants to none, that although Mr. Shelvocke, their former captain, took upon him to command them to do this and that, he ought to be made sensible, that whoever was their commander now, it was their courtesy that made him so. But that, however, Mr. Shelvocke might have the refusal of the command,

A. D.

1720,

The people assemble privately, and resolve upon a new scheme of their own, to proceed by.

The mutineers chuse one Morpew to be their speaker.

- A. D. ' if the majority thought fit, but not else.  
1720. ' At the same time, he observed my com-  
' mand was too lofty and arbitrary for a pri-  
' vate ship, that I should have continued  
' in men of war, where people were obliged  
' *quietly to bear* all hardships imposed upon  
' them, whether right or wrong.' To this  
some persons present, who had some regard for  
me, answered, ' that they had never known or  
' seen me treat any body unjustly or severely,  
' and that however rigid I might be, they  
' had nobody else to depend on ; and that  
' they would all do well to consider, how  
' many difficulties I had already conducted  
' them through, and that (supposing we were  
' preserved out of the hands of our enemies)  
' how many more were to come, no one  
' could tell ; that if they expected, or intend-  
' ed to return to England, it could be by no  
' other means than taking a turn round the  
' world, and that, in that case, there was none  
' capable to undertake the care of them, but  
' myself ; reminding them also of my com-  
' mission, and the respect due to me on that  
' account, besides the protection they would  
' receive from it, should they fall into the  
' hands of the Spaniards.' This had some  
effect on the meaner sort, but they were ea-  
sily

fily diverted from the thoughts of returning to obedience, by the chief concerned, who was no less than my first lieutenant Brooks, who had made the before-mentioned Morphew his confident, even on board the ship. Brooks had served as fore-mast man, the voyage before he was made my lieutenant, and had contracted such a liking to the fore-castle conversation, and way of caballing, that he was lost to all the civilities I had continually heaped upon him, and now openly, as he had before privately, preferred the familiarity of the common sailors, to any thing he could see in the great cabin. This had so far gained him the esteem of the common sailors, who looked on him as a good-humoured, considerate officer, that it was no hard matter for Morphew, by the assistance of this gentleman, who made him his bosom companion, to carry the majority of them which way he pleased. Besides this, they were again doubly supported by Mr. Randall, my second lieutenant, who was Brooks's brother in law, and others not worth naming, who, forgetting all the obligations they owed to the Gentlemen in England, who, so easily promoted them to their posts, and all the lawful respect due to me, were now running themselves

A. D.

1720.

Brooks, my  
first lieutenant  
at the head of  
the malcon-  
tents.

*Irishman*

A. D. 1720. themselves down the steep of ingratitude, and incurring irrecoverable damage to their characters and interests. The first, and most remarkable outrage committed by this gang of levellers, was on Mr. la Porte, my third lieutenant, whom Morphew assaulted in a barbarous manner, and knock'd him down upon the beach, whilst Mr. Brooks stood by, an eye-witness of this brutality. This being reported to me, I check'd Mr. Brooks for his inhumanity, and upbraided him very warmly with it; but all the answer I got from him, was, that Mr. la Porte should keep a good tongue in his head, and take care how he affronted any body again. It was apparent, all shame or sense of honour was banished from him, when he could suffer one, who was both a brother officer, and a gentleman who had commanded several ships, to be thus cruelly abused. This piece of insolence served as an introduction to what followed, which, I believe, in all its circumstances, is not to be heard of, in any former expedition into these seas, or any other.

For having met together, as I have already mentioned, and formed a scheme and articles to be observed by them, for the time to come, they came before my tent, desiring to speak

A. D.

1720.

speak with me. When I came out to them, they gave me a paper into my hand, which began with a preamble to this effect, that, 'Whereas the Speedwell was cast away (mentioning the day of the month and the date of the year) they were now of consequence at their own disposal, so that their obligations to the owners and me, were of no validity, the ship being now no more; they therefore had now thought fit to frame such articles, as would be most conducive to their own interest.' Two of their chief articles were, first, 'That what money or plate should hereafter be taken, should be all divided amongst them as soon as it could conveniently be done; and, secondly, that in all attacks by sea or land, and every thing else, the people's consent was to be asked in general, every one to have a single vote, and their captain to have two.' This was the substance of this paper, as well as I can remember, for I have not seen it since. But in the allotment of shares, I found myself reduced from sixty shares to six. I failed not to oppose their measures in the best manner I could think of, and desired to know what had been done to them, that they should bear so hard upon me as to deprive both the owners

A. D. 1720. and myself, of what I thought was our right ; but they answered, that as for the owners, they could not possibly have any thing to do with them now, or require any service from them ; and that, as to myself, I might think myself well off, since the Jamaica captains were allowed but four shares, and they had given me two more, out of the regard they had for me, and, upon the whole, thought I was favoured in having the refusal of the command of them (as they called it) which if I thought fit to accept of, it was well, but

They insist upon my signing their articles.

first expected that I should sign their articles, or they would not trust themselves under my conduct, as they should always be apprehensive I had sinister intentions upon them, and should serve them as ~~C-----~~<sup>Cremon</sup> had served some of his men, who (they heard) happening to be taken separately, he denied them, and suffered eight of them to be hanged as pyrates, before his face.

I was at a loss, not knowing what to do in this dilemma, and bewildered with the thoughts of subjecting myself to the caprices of a giddy mutinous gang of obstinate fellows who were void of reason, and in a fair way of being hardened to all kinds of wickedness. But upon the whole, I found I was under an indispenfable

dispo  
whe  
ever  
ever  
whe  
turn  
gun.  
fused  
shou  
or if  
left  
viole  
missi  
did  
could  
were  
that  
little  
with  
chan  
ly b  
for i  
them  
they  
ferre  
post  
given  
Mr.

A. D.

1720.

dispensable necessity of signing this paper, when I considered the little probability of ever doing otherwise than surrendering, if ever we did get on float again, and I hoped, when things were thus settled, they would turn their thoughts to the work we had begun. I considered with myself, if I had refused it, it was more than probable we should never have got off from this Island, or if the rest had, I might have been forcibly left behind; or they might have used some violence towards me for the sake of my commission, and few of them have known who did the deed: and farther, what opposition could I have made, when even my officers were so far from offering me their assistance, that they had voluntarily given up their own little distinctions, and would even seem angry with the common fellows when they, by chance, gave them the title they had formerly born on board the ship, reproving them for it, and telling them, they did not think themselves officers now, or better men than they were, until the majority had conferred upon them their former, or any other post they thought them fittest for, and had given their consent that their brother officers Mr. la Porte, third lieutenant, and Mr. Dodd,

My chief officers desert me, and voluntarily give up their distinctions.

Mr. la Porte, third lieutenant, Mr. Dodd lieutenant of marines, and Mr. Hendry, purser, reduced to midshipmen.

lieutenant

A. D. lieutenant of marines, and Mr. Hendry, pur-  
 1720. fer and agent, should be reduced to midship-  
 men. I must observe, that Mr. Coldsea, the  
 master, never sided with the rest, nor ever  
 offered to oppose them, and this perhaps from  
 the improbability he had conceived of doing  
 me or himself any good by it. In short, hav-  
 ing now very unwillingly satisfied them in all I  
 thought they could ask, I recommended to  
 them the vessel we had begun, not doubting but  
 after this they would have used their constant  
 endeavours to finish her, that they might have  
 an opportunity of putting their project in ex-  
 ecution, and they said they would.

I sign their  
 articles.

The people  
 assemble pri-  
 vately toge-  
 ther a second  
 time.

But early the next morning, going down  
 to the beach as usual, and expecting to find e-  
 very one employed, I saw how much I was  
 mistaken in this point; for caballing and mu-  
 tinying were become so pleasant to them, and  
 it was so agreeable to them to be continually  
 tyrannizing over their captain, that I really  
 believe for the pleasure of thinking them-  
 selves equal to me, they would contentedly  
 have lived on this desert, at least as long as I  
 had lived.

In short, they once again retired to the  
 great tree, and I saw none of them, except  
 the carpenter, and two or three more, who,  
 notwithstanding



A. D.

1720.

notwithstanding they were abettors of the designs that were carrying on, yet the hopes of a little money from me, had made them work pretty diligently, though I cannot say they fatigued themselves much. However, I was now more than ever at my wits end, and could not guess what mischief they could have in their heads, after what had already passed; but they took care not to keep me long in suspense about the result of their last meeting; for, betimes the next morning, they surrounded my tent, while Morpew, and Stewart, their agent, came in to me, and told me, They came in the name of all the people to demand every thing belonging to the Gentlemen Adventurers, out of my possession, and particularly seven hundred and fifty pieces of eight weight in Pinna or virgin silver, a silver dish, weighing seventy-five ounces, and two hundred and fifty dollars in money. It may be imagined I did not easily part with all this, but they desired I would use no argument, or make any dispute to deliver them what was their own; for as it came out of the wreck, they insisted on it, the owners could have nothing to do with it, and resolved they were to have it by some means or other. In short, I was obliged to give it all up,

And the next morning demand from me all the money and plate I had saved belonging to the gentlemen owners.

A. D. up, and they shared it amongst them that very  
 1720. moment, according to their new regulation.

After this, they entirely destroyed what little power they had allowed me over them; and the meanest of them were taught they were as good as I, and that it was unreasonable I should be respected any more than another. They sometimes would not allow me a quota of the fish that was caught, wondering I could not go out to catch it for myself; and at best would give my servant who used to fetch it, but the leavings after they had chosen the best; and Morpew's mess, and some others have sometimes fed on the best fish the sea about us afforded, when I have been obliged to take up with Seal, after a hard day's labour on the strand; nay, my very officers, amongst the rest, enticed my servants from me; and to compleat their

My chief  
 officers entire-  
 ly leave me to  
 herd with  
 Morpew.

insults, Brooks, first lieutenant, who used sometimes to eat with me, entirely deserted my mess, to join with Morpew to partake of his better fare. Upon this I was forced to part with Mr. la Porte, Mr. Dodd, and Mr. Hendry, being no longer able to provide for so many, when I could scarce get any thing to eat myself, so that I had but a slender family, which consisted only of my surgeon,

geon, my son, and a black, who used to kill seals, go a fishing, and get palm cabbage in the mountains for us.

I was now quite tired out with incessant mutinies, and the constant labour I underwent; insomuch, that fearing I should never be able to bring them to any good, I became so desperate as to have willingly embraced an opportunity, if such could have presented itself, of getting away from them in our yaul; which, though it would have been to the last degree hazardous, yet I began to prefer the dangers of the sea, in a small open boat, to what I thought myself exposed to on this place by my ship's company. I apprehended, they would never rest till they had made themselves entirely their own masters, by privately making away with me; but as this escape was an undertaking impracticable on many accounts, I became somewhat melancholy and pensive, preparing myself for the worst that could happen. They perceiving this change in me, grew suspicious I was now contriving means to reduce them, and bring them into some order again. They pretended, therefore, they could not be safe whilst I had the arms in my possession, and they determined to get them from me. To  
this

A. D.  
1720.

this purpose the ringleaders went from tent to tent, telling their accomplices I was making a party against them, and designed to leave them on the island, which, considering the advantage I had of the arms, might easily be effected by a few, who might drive them from their dwellings, and force them into the mountains. Having by this groundless story added fuel to the fire, and increased the aversion and disrespect wherewith they had already exasperated the people against me, they proposed they should all, in a body, demand their arms from me. This they did

Brooks and Morpew at head of the rest of the people demand their arms from me.

without delay, headed by Brooks and Morpew, who, in the presence of all the people, used me with so much impudence, and such opprobrious language, as never could have been believed to come out of the mouths of men (meaning the officers) who were so many ways obliged to me for my good treatment of them in all the former part of this unfortunate voyage; they even went so far as to threaten my son, for only telling Morpew, that every one present had not chosen him for his speaker, and had there been any one in the assembly hardy enough to vindicate me, they would have incurred the danger of being very roughly treated. The chief reason

for  
wa  
sh  
ha  
if  
the  
  
ple  
pov  
thin  
me  
from  
pen  
lead  
bott  
pen  
abov  
trou  
each  
well  
By  
with  
shou  
of t  
safeg  
ever  
they  
mak

son why I troubled myself with the arms, was, that having them under my eye, I should keep them in good order, and not having above one flint to a musquet, I knew if the people had them, they would render them usefess in a little time.

Having carried this point, they had the pleasure of squandering away their time, and powder and shot, in firing at cats, or any thing else to waste the ammunition. This put me upon my guard to hinder them, if I could, from taking away the powder, which lay open under a great tree near my tent. As to lead, they could get enough of that from the bottom of the wreck, which was all our dependance; for we had not been able to save above ten pound weight of small shot. These troubles crowding in upon me, on the back of each another, pressed too hard upon me to be well sustained by so slender a support as I had. By intervals, however, I still flattered myself with hopes (I had no other cordial) that I should not only prevail on some of the gravest of them to look on their arms as their only safeguard from the Spaniards; but also, if ever I had them on float again, that the use they might find of me in extremities, might make some reformation amongst them.

A, D,

1720.

I took all opportunities of ringing in their ears, such instances of the cruelty of the Spaniards towards our countrymen, and others in America, as I had collected; and reminded them how easily we might provide for ourselves, from the experience we already had had of the enemy's management at sea. I had sometimes myself a little comfort in this reflection, but was by turns deprived of all hopes by the tedious advances of our bark, and the little probability I could foresee of finishing her, in the midst of the impediments I had hitherto had to struggle with.

Discover a  
large ship off  
at sea.

What I have now related is the substance of what occurred from May the twenty fourth, till August the fifteenth, one thousand seven hundred and twenty, when we had sight of a large ship, which put us into a great hurry, and gave us a considerable alarm. Before she crossed the bay, I ordered all the fires to be put out, and confined the negroes and Indians, lest the ship should be becalmed under the land, and any of them should attempt to swim off to her. I could not tell what to think of her. I conceived it impossible she should be a man of war, who had had advice of our shipwreck; but then if she should, by chance, stand into the bay, and discover  
what

what we were about, and the wreck on the shore, we should soon have the whole force of the kingdom of Chili upon us. However, I was not long under these apprehensions, for she kept away large, and at too great a distance to perceive any thing distinctly of us.

On this occasion I got most of the people under arms, and was glad to see so many of them, in some measure, obedient again to command. I told them I was pleased to see their arms in such good order; to which they answered, impertinently, that it was for their own sakes: But before they were dispersed, I told them, the necessity of our affairs was such, that it required every one to give his assistance, and use his utmost endeavours to get the bark afloat, instead of caballing against me, which would, in the end, be very prejudicial to them, whatever thoughts they might have of it at present—that if we were discover'd, all hopes would be gone, and we could reasonably expect no other than to be slaves in some of the mines—that we had still a great deal of work, and never above ten of the more considerate and commonly but six or seven who attended it, and that, as they knew, to shew an example, I was always one of the number.

R

Bu

A. D.

1720.

But they were so deaf to all I could say, and so wilfully insensible of the impendant destruction which was most likely to fall upon us, that the more I made use of reason to reclaim them, and the more I pointed out to them the evils that might befall them by their continual mutinies, and the more I encouraged them, by any future prospect of advantage, the more they ran into the extreams of confusion and distraction.

A convincing instance of this, I am now going to relate.

The People  
divided into  
two Parties,

The very next day after we had seen the ship just now mentioned, they became divided amongst themselves. The question started was, whether or no the bark should be carry'd on, or whether they should not build two large shallops, and set what was done of the bark on fire. One part of them alledged, she would be the cause of our being found out, before she could be finish'd; and, that it was impossible she should ever be fit for the sea; whereas, boats might be built in private places, where (if twenty ships came) they could know nothing of them. The favourers of this new design, who were headed by Morphew and his friend, aim'd at a separation by this means, and did not doubt they



A. D.

1720.

they should have their desire, considering the great influence they had, as yet, had over their fellow sufferers. But as this must be carried by a majority of votes, according to their own articles, they assembled before my tent to debate this matter, which they did in a noisy clamorous manner on both sides. But in order to come to a conclusion, I positively assur'd them that boats would be impracticable, because our tools and materials too, were almost worn out and gone, and therefore that it was in vain for them to dispute about this point. The workmen, and a considerable majority of the rest, sided with me in behalf of the bark. But at night the carpenter sent me word that if I did not deliver him the money agreed on at the beginning, notwithstanding the terms of the payment of it were not yet elapsed, I should not see his face again; so I was obliged to treat this gentleman as he pleased to have me, and raise the money for him. The most provoking part of this new proposal was, that the fellows who took upon them to mention it, and stickle for it, were those who had never done an hour's work since we had been cast away, but had been, on the contrary, the first movers in perverting the minds of the rest, and were now, in return for

A. D. my indefatigable pains to serve them, come  
 1720. to insult me, and the few who had been my  
 assistants on the strand. Being disappointed  
 as to this new scheme, they openly declar'd I  
 should not be their captain, and that none but

Morphew's  
 party not gain-  
 ing their  
 point, they de-  
 clare I should  
 not be their  
 captain.

Brooks should be their commander, and this  
 might have been brought to pass, had it not  
 been for the people of the boatswain's tent,  
 who were some of the oldest sailors, and who  
 although they were fond enough of thinking  
 themselves their own masters, and would not  
 submit to regular command, yet had that  
 sort of regard for me, as not to consent I  
 should be left on the Island. I must own it  
 was a thing very indifferent to me, had I not  
 thought my duty required I should do all that  
 in me lay, to hinder so many of his majesty's  
 subjects, entrusted under my care, from be-  
 coming profligate vagabonds.

To compleat the number of our divisions  
 and dissensions, there arose a third party, who  
 were resolved to have nothing to do with the  
 other two, they purposing to stay on the  
 island. These were to the number of twelve,  
 who accordingly separated themselves from  
 the rest, and never appear'd amongst us, ex-  
 cept in the night, when they used to come  
 about our tents and the bark we were build-  
 ing,

ing, to steal powder, lead, and axes, and, in short, whatever else they could lay their hands on. These, however, I found means to manage, and took from them all their arms, ammunition, and the rest of their plunder, and threatened that if they were found within musquet shot of our tents, they should be treated as enemies.

In a little time afterwards, these divisions had so far weakened the whole body of them, that, by degrees, they began to listen a little to what I said to them, and I prevailed so far as to get most of them into a working humour. Mr. Brooks now came with a feigned submission, and desired he might eat with me again; but this, in the main, abated nothing of his esteem for Morpew. His dissimulation, however, proved of signal service, as it contributed to the speedy finishing of the bark. This claimed the assistance of all our heads and hands; for when we came to plank her bottom, we had most disheartning difficulties to encounter with; for having no plank but pieces of the wreck's deck, we found it so dry and stubborn, that fire and water had scarce any effect in making it pliable and fit for use. It rent and split, and flew like glass; so that now I had sufficient reasons to believe,

A. D.

1720.

The people being weakened by their divisions, begin to hearken to reason.

Brooks, first lieutenant submits himself to me again.

A difficult piece of work in planking the ship's bottom.

- A. D. after all, our labour had been in vain, and  
 1720. that we must quietly sit down with the disagreeable hopes of being taken off, from hence, by some Spanish ship, some time or other, and after all our troubles here, be led to a prison, to reflect on all our misfortunes past. However, by constant labour, and a variety of contrivances, we, in the end, patched our bark up in such a manner, that I dare say the like was never seen, and I may venture to affirm, that such a bottom never swam on the surface of the sea before.

The armourer  
 finishes a large  
 yaul.

September the ninth, the boat, which I have already mentioned to be begun by the armourer, was launched; and being now in a fair way of compleating our bark, there yet remained unconsidered and undetermined, what provisions we should get to support us in our voyage. This was as necessary to be looked into, as the finishing of our embarkation, the one being useless without the other; and all the stock we had, consisted but of one cask of beef, five or six bushels of Farina or Cassader flour, together with four or five live hogs.

Found a method of saving  
 the congereels

I made several experiments to save both fish and seal, but we found it impossible. At length, we luckily thought on a method of curing

A. D.

1720.

curing the conger eel, by splitting it, and taking out the back-bone, then dipping it in salt water, and afterwards hanging it up to dry, in a great smoke. As no other fish could be preserved after this manner, the fishermen were ordered to catch what congers they could. And now several of the people, who had not yet struck a stroke, began to repent of their folly, as they grew weary of living on this place, and offered their service to go a fishing, every one making some foolish excuse or other, for having been so long idle; asking my pardon, and promising not to lose a moment for the time to come.

The new boat being sent to try her fortune, I was, for the first time, very uneasy during her absence, lest her crew should be hardy enough to run away with her, and forsake us. The new boat sent a fishing for congers to save for a sea-store But, at night, they returned, and brought with them a great parcel of fish, of several sorts, amongst which were two hundred conger eels. This was a good beginning, and every tent took a proportion of them to save. The boat was hauled up every night, and a strict watch was kept over her, to prevent any whatsoever, from running away with her.

Having this conveniency of a large boat, I desired Mr. Brooks, our only diver, to try Mr Brooks at my desire dives, and recovers one of our quarter-deck guns.

- A. D. 1720. what he could recover from that part of the wreck which lay under water. He accordingly undertook it, and could find but one small gun, which he weighed, and brought on shore, together with two pieces of a large church candlestick, which was a part of the plate which belonged to the Gentlemen Adventurers.

Our boat was now daily employed in fishing. The armourer constantly supplied them with hooks, and there was no want of lines, which were made of twisted ribbon. A great quantity of ribbon was driven on shore, and proved of this unexpected use to us. In the mean time, those who were ashore, made twice layed stuff for rigging and other uses. We patched up the canvas for sails; the cooper compleated his casks; and, in a short time, we had masts an-end tolerably well rigged, and thought we made a comfortable figure. But notwithstanding this shew, I had a damp upon my spirits, when I ruminated within myself, the certain and unavoidable difficulty we should meet with in caulking her tight. This was likely to prove a very ugly piece of work, where we had bad seams, wretched tools, and indifferent artists to deal with, which was our case. However, when

Meet with  
great difficulty  
in caulking  
the bark.

we

A. D.

1720.

we had done it, and came to put in water, to try the tightness of our work, it was followed by an universal outcry, *a sieve ! a sieve !* and now every one appeared truly melancholy and dispirited, infomuch that I was afraid the people would have despaired, and desisted from using any farther means. But, in a little time, and by incessant labour, we brought her into a tolerable condition, and having repaired the ship's pumps (which were much shattered) I contrived them to fit our bark. This they cried was a poor dependance, but I desired them to have patience, and to assist in what more could be thought of, and prepare to launch her, and that then we should be the better able to judge what we might expect, before we ventured to sea in her, and that, in the mean time, the cooper should make a bucket for each man, if his materials would hold out. This being approved of by all, it was agreed to put her into the water the next spring-tide, which fell out on the fifth of October, by which time we had saved about two thousand three hundred conger eels, weighing, one with another, about one pound each, and made about sixty gallons of seal's oil to fry them in. This with what I mentioned before was all our sea-stock.

The

A. D.

1720.

The bark  
completed,  
launched and  
called the Re-  
covery.

The appointed time being come, we were all ready, but in launching her, as she fell from the blocks, that which was to receive her abast, gave way, and down she settled, and stuck fast. Our launch being with the head towards the sea, I thought we were irretrievably spoiled now. But when we came to make purchases to raise her up again, we happily found she did not hang so heavily as I had dreaded. By this means we got her clear off and saved the same tide. As she went off I named her the *Recovery*, though I was sadly afraid of hearing ill news from those afloat in her. But all proved indifferently well, and knowing it to be dangerous for her to lye here long, especially having no other anchor than a great stone, and a slight rope to hold her with, and that the least puff of wind might have driven and destroyed her upon the rocks; we got all the water off that day, which we did so much the easier and quicker, because the casks were ready stowed in the hold. She had two masts, and was of about the burthen of twenty tons; and, to my great satisfaction, I found, that one pump, constantly working, kept her free. The next day, October the sixth, we got every one on board and embarked; leaving behind us eleven or twelve



twelve of thoe who had deserted us. They were deaf to all persuasions; and, in short, sent me word, ' They were not yet prepared for the other world; ' so they, with the like number of Blacks and Indians, remained behind on the island.

A. D.

1720.

*Our manner of living on the island of  
Juan Fernandes.*

THAT I may, before I go any farther, satisfy those who may be willing to know by what means so many of us subsisted so long by the produce of an uninhabited Island, I shall here subjoin a brief account of our manner of living here. At first the weather not permitting us to go a fishing, and that, for some time after we were cast away, necessity drove us to make use of the entrails of seals. We could not, for a pretty while, venture upon their flesh itself, which is rank and unpleasant. This destroyed great numbers of these amphibious creatures, who, in short, were so seemingly alarmed by such a continual and abundant slaughter of them, that, from the innumerable shoals we had of them at the beginning, they diminished so much by degrees, by taking refuge in other parts

A. D.

1720.

parts of the island, where they were out of the way of such disturbances, that very few of them appeared with us. This, in process of time, obliged us to eat of their flesh. As their fat was very strong and rank, we always stripped it off, and then roasted them till they were as dry as a chip. No food ever required a dram more than this, but we had not the least drop of any spirituous liquor. Cats were plenty, and esteemed a better sort of diet, by every one but myself, who could never be persuaded to taste of them. As to goats flesh, that was hard to come at, on several accounts, such as the scarcity of powder and shot, and the want of shoes, which were mostly supplied by the skins of goats or seals, laced to our feet with thongs of the same. In the mean time we used to take all opportunities of fair weather to go out a fishing. But we, for a while, were deprived of the benefit of that, by the roguery of some of the people, who did, one night (for what ends I know not) set the boat adrift, and she was lost. This put us upon a contrivance of making small boats of basket work, covered with sea-lyons skins. With these we made shift to catch the small fish near the shore, but dared not go out of the bay with them. These boats served

served till the armourer had compleated the yaul I have already taken notice of. Our fish we fryed in seals oil, without any seasoning, or any thing of the bread kind to eat with it, or ought else but a little wild sorrel.

As to our habitations, they were as mean and inconvenient as possible. Some were made with the boughs of trees, some were covered with seals and sea-lyons skins, and some with the remains of the ship's sails. Often, in the night, sudden flaws of wind would descend from the mountains, and leave us (if I may so express myself) in bed, exposed to the weather. The furniture of our tents consisted of such utensils for cookery as we could find. They were very scarce, insomuch, that the pitch-ladle, and covers of the ship's coppers, were converted into frying-pans. Many shifts we made, which it would be tedious and unnecessary to mention. We always made great account of the palm-cabbage, when we could get it, which we never did but with much trouble; as the whole tree seldom affords above two or three pound that is eatable.

*Description*

A. D.

1720.

*Description of the island of Juan Fernandes, in the latitude of thirty-three degrees, and thirty minutes South, on the coast of Chili.*

My reader may reasonably expect an exact account of this island from me. But the frequent disturbances I met with from my people, and my constant attendance on the vessel we were building, deprived me of the opportunities of making such remarks on it as I otherwise should; therefore, though I cannot give so perfect an account of it as I could wish, yet, for the amusement of such whose curiosity may require it, I would beg leave to observe, that this island, situated in the latitude of thirty-three degrees, thirty minutes South, ninety leagues to the Westward of the continent of Chili, is, as appeared to me, about three leagues long, and two leagues in breadth. Towards the sea it shews to be no other than rocky precipices. The whole body of it consists of very high mountains, and deep, narrow valleys, insomuch that there is no walking a quarter of a mile, except on the sea-shore, without going up or down a steep

A. D.

1720.

steep declivity. The anchoring place is on the North side, and is to be known by a sort of table mountain, on each side of which is a lofty peak. As to anchoring here, I would have none come to, in less than forty fathom, or think of staying long here, especially if the sun be to the Northward of the equator; for although some of our navigators have reported that the Northern winds, which only can affect the road, never blow strong here; yet I, by sad experience, found it is very subject to tempestuous gales from the Northern quarter. In going in, beware of the flaws or flurries of wind, which come down the narrow valleys so violent, as to be oftentimes dangerous. These flaws too, in the night, are enough to alarm you as you lie at anchor. Whilst you are in this road, it is impossible you should have the wind steady in any quarter, except directly out of the sea; for, lying within half a mile of the shore, you are, as it were, close surrounded by very high mountains, almost three quarters of the compass round, so that you are divided between the extremes of dead calms (or at most faint breezes) and furious gusts of wind from all parts of the bay, in the short space of a few minutes. Upon the whole, though  
it

A. D. 1720. it be a very commodious place for ships, who may resort hither, to wood and water at ; yet, it is my opinion, the anchorage here, is far from being safe.

Air. It enjoys a fine wholesome air, insomuch that out of seventy of us that were on it, for the space of five months and eleven days, not one of us had an hour's sickness, notwithstanding we fed on such foul diet as we did, without bread or salt. We had no complaints amongst us, except of an incessant, craving appetite, and the want of our former strength and vigour. For my own part, I must acknowledge the bounty of providence, that gave me strength to cope with the vexations I met with ; for although I lost much of my flesh, I became one of the strongest and most active men on the island ; from being before very corpulent, and almost crippled with the gout. I walked much, and worked ~~hard~~ every day, without being in the least afflicted with that distemper, and may say, that if it had not pleased God so to have enabled me, we might probably have remained on this island for years to come, since it is a place very little frequented by the Spaniards.

Soil. The soil is fruitful, abounding with various sorts of large beautiful trees, mostly aromatick

A. D.

1720.

matick. The names of those we knew were the Piemento-tree, which bears a leaf like a Myrtle, but somewhat larger, with a blue blossom. Their trunks are short and thick, and their heads very bushy, and as round and regular, almost, as if kept so by art. There is another sort much superior in bulk to the former, which I take to be somewhat like that which affords the jesuit's bark. On the tops of some of the mountains are plains covered with groves of the Italian laurel, mentioned by Frezier, in his description of Chili. These grow up in a strait slender body, from which sprout small irregular branches, from the root to the top, bearing leaves like the laurel in England, but smaller. Palm-trees are likewise found in most parts of this island, growing in smooth joints like a cane, some thirty, some forty feet high. The head of them is like the cocoa-nut-tree, except that the leaves of them are of a paler green. They bear large bunches of scarlet berries bigger than a floe, which taste like our haws, and have a stone as big as that of a heart-cherry. What seamen call palm-cabbage is the very substance of the head of this tree, which being cut off, and dismembered of its great spreading leaves, and of all that is hard

S

and





336

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D. leaving us to stand in for the land and cruise  
1721. by ourselves, though every moment expecting signals from the Success, who was soon far enough out of the reach of our sight, even if it had been day-light.

Thus this man, perhaps, through an excess of mean-spiritedness, and dreading the engagement with a ship who was always known to defend itself with some obstinacy, neglect-

322

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D.  
1721.

should ever get home, and being weary of the work that was imposed upon them, desired I would let them go on board the Success, for a passage to England; which I consenting to, they went on board according-

Continuing

of turtle after this manner, it was not the  
greatest inconvenience that attended us; the  
Y 2 dressing

WORLD.

land and cruise  
moment expect-  
who was soon  
our fight, even

rough an excess  
reading the en-  
s always known  
tinacy, neglect-

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

337

A. D.

1721.

lifted up to the highest pitch of satisfaction,  
in the good fortune I had of being joined to  
my consort in so noble and advantageous a  
design, after so long a separation, only to be  
plunged the deeper into a gulph of despair. My  
people happened to guess right in this affair,  
being convinced of the strictness of their look-  
out, and blamed my easy belief in a man  
who had, just before, so openly and maliciously

WORLD.

ing weary of  
n them, de-  
rd the Suc-  
; which I  
d according-

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

323

A. D.

1721.

Continuing our way along shore, we, a few  
days after, met with the Success, in quest of  
Sonsonnate, where they expected to receive  
the Marquis of Villa Roche's ransom. He  
had been, for some time, a prisoner on board

Meet the  
Success a se-  
cond time  
near the port

338

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D.

1721.



S E C T. XII.

*Arrival in the road of Sonfonnate, in  
the latitude of thirteen degrees,  
North on the coast of Mexico.*

324

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D.

1721.

dreffing it made a great consumption of  
our water, the quantity of which decreafed  
upon us very fuddenly, by the continual  
ufe of it in boiling the turtle with plantain  
This brought us into a ftate of famine

RLD.

000000\*  
000000\*

nnate, in  
degrees,

### *A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

we found she did not make so formidable a figure as we expected she would. At sun-rising the land-breeze blew so fresh off from the shore, we worked but slowly up with her, and in the mean time we received all her fire upon every board we made. We made no return to all this, though their boat was busily employed to bring soldiers from the shore to this ship. They had hoisted a

339

A. D.

1721.

D.

ption of  
decreased  
continual  
a plantain  
of famine,

### *A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

met with a double baulk, both as to our hopes of Guatulco, and the ship; for we were now so far to the leeward of our port, by bearing down to him, that it was needless to beat up so far against the wind.

325

A. D.

1721.

ished, nothing could have urged us to, on  
this

340

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D. that I might make our small force the most  
1721. beneficial to us that might be, I ordered our  
three guns to be brought over on the side we  
were like to engage with them, and be-  
ing within musquet-shot, we discharged them.  
The sea-breeze freshening, ran us upon them  
very fast, whilst our small arms were briskly  
and effectually employed to break their pow-  
der iars. before we came to board them,

326

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D. made the appointed signal, we stood so near  
1721. to one another, that, to use the sea phrase, a  
bisket might have been tossed from ship to  
ship, but we did not change a word with

to, on  
this

of Acapulco, towards the evening, saw a  
ship between us and the shore. I bore

Y 4

down

LD.

the most  
ordered our  
the side we  
n, and be-  
rged them.  
upon them  
ere briskly  
their pow-  
ard them,

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

she should chance to meet with us in her  
way. Our small arms, to do justice to my  
people, were handled with the greatest dex-  
terity ; but being mostly employed in shatter-  
ing the powder jars, that the combustible  
matter in them might fall into the water,  
there was none killed on board of her, but  
the Contre-master, and only one slightly

341

A. D.

1721.

o.

so near  
hraft, a  
ship to  
d with

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

this savage coast, but such an extremity as we  
were plunged into at this time. And so truly  
sensible was Clipperton of the difficulties and  
hazards we had to cope with if our design

327

A. D.

1721.

such a change in him that I should have  
looked

342

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D. which was brought to me in the evening.  
1721. We could none of us understand it, for our  
chief and only interpreter of the Spanish lan-  
guage staid behind us on Juan Fernandes,  
but by the messenger that brought it, we found  
that it was some account of a truce on foot  
between the crowns of Great-Britain and  
Spain, and that the governour requested me  
to send a messenger that he might thoroughly

328

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D. down to her, till perceiving her to be a large  
1721. Europe built ship, she appeared much the  
larger, by reason of a small mist on the sur-  
face of the water, with Spanish colours fly-

uld have  
looked

perton, Mr. Godfrey, the agent, and the  
rest

RLD.

the evening.  
it, for our  
Spanish lan-  
Fernandes,  
it, we found  
uce on foot  
-Britain and  
requested me  
t thoroughly

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

would stay fifteen days to be made sure of it,  
if the governor would supply us with water  
and provisions; but that if he did not, I could  
not pretend to make a stay of above twenty-  
four hours here, and therefore I sent him the  
following letter.

343

A. D.

1721.

March the 31st.

Honourable Sir,

1721.

D.

be a large  
much the  
the fur-  
lours fly-

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

looked on all his signals as the artifice of the  
enemy, who might have acquainted them-  
selves with them by the information of such  
of our men as they might have met with if

329

A. D.

1721.



344

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D.

1721.

This being delivered to the governour, he consented to the request I made in it, and our boat went on shore every morning with a flag of truce. The first four days we were supplied with eight small jars of water, and on the fifth, we were reduced to five, and during the whole time, we had but one small cow, which was attended by a large boatful of men. Amongst them were two priests,

330

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

A. D.

1721.

rest of their officers. I went on board according to appointment with Mr. Brooks and Randall my lieutenants, and was received with a seeming unreserved civility, and all

have

But

RLD.

vernour, he  
in it, and  
orning with  
ays we were  
water, and  
o five, and  
ut one small  
arge boatful  
two priests,

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

my people to be taken prisoners as soon as they landed. I was all the day in suspense, and not able to guess what it could be that detained them so long on shore, but was far from imagining the governour would or could have made such a breach in the laws of nations, and the security of a flag of truce, as to violate the protection of it, which even some of the most barbarous nations esteem

345

A. D.

1721.

LD.

a board ac-  
Brooks and  
as received  
ty, and all

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

have had much the worst of it on account of their superior weight of metal, and the better capacity of their ships, which are built very strong, to bear a cannonading. Clipper-

331

A. D.

1721.

346

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*A. D.  
1721.

men who brought these letters, told me, that Frederick Mackenzey, one of the boat's crew, had let the governour into the secret of our distresses, and of my former design to get water at the island of Tygers in the gulph of Amapala, which, he said he would take care to prevent, if we dared be so hardy as to attempt it. He seems to have believed he had us now safe enough, knowing we

382

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*A. D.  
1721.

Before I returned to my own ship, I acquainted captain Clipperton with our slender stock of provisions, but particularly with our want of water: and he told me he had

Thus

signal

ORLD.

old me, that  
boat's crew,  
secret of our  
design to get  
in the gulph  
would take  
so hardy as  
ave believed  
knowing we

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

347

shore so well, that they voluntarily offered  
their service, and a third went to throw the  
water out of the canoe. I sent the following  
letter by them, in French.

A. D.

1721.

Honourable Sir,

' **Y**OU know very well that I have lain  
' here some time for a right interre

LD.

hip, I ac-  
ur slender  
y with our  
ne he had

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

333

Thus we cruised in good order, and with  
a great deal of hope, until March the seven-  
teenth, the time appointed for me to suffer  
the most cruel and perfidious piece of trea-

A. D.

1721.

A. D. signal for going about. The next morning we had no sight of any ship near us, which laid me under the most terrible apprehensions, considering the sad condition we were in

leaving

WORLD.

at morning  
us, which  
apprehensi-  
we were in  
difficulties are

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

coast subject to long calms, variable winds,  
and uncertain currents.

But before I go farther, it will be necessary  
to set this cruel and dishonourable behaviour  
of the

335

A. D.

1721.

A. D. 1720. shore, mixed with the violent roaring of the sea-lyons repeated all around by the echoes of deep vallies, and blended with the incessant howlings of numberless seals. These according to their age, make a hoarser or a shriller noise, so that in this confused medley, a man might imagine he heard the different tones and outcries of all the species of animals upon earth mixed together. To these may be frequently added, the alarm given by the noise of the sudden and precipitate rumbling of trees down steep descents. There is hardly a gust of wind stirring, that does not tear up a great many trees by the roots, especially those near the brinks of precipices where they have but a slight hold in the earth. All these, or any one of these nightly noises, might be sufficient to disturb the repose of any who had not been for some time inur'd thereto.

Thus have I given an account of such parts of this island as I have had a sight of, and of every thing worthy of observation on it, which occurred to me ; but this only relates to the Northern half, the mountains being impassable to go to the Southern parts of it, so I can say nothing particular of them.

*Departure*

*Departure from the island of Juan Fernandes, in the bark we built there, called the Recovery.*

OCTOBER the fixth, in the evening, we departed, with nothing to subsist at sea with, but the aforementioned smoked congers, whereof one was allowed to each man for twenty-four hours, one cask of beef, and four live hogs, which had fed all the time we had been on the island, on the putrified carcases of the seals we had killed, together with three or four bushels of Farina. We were upwards of forty of us crouded together, and lying upon the bundles of eels, and being in no method of keeping themselves clean, all our senses were as much offended as possible. There was not a drop of water to be had without sucking it out of the cask with the barrel of a musquet, which was used by every body promiscuously, and the little unfavoury morsels we daily ate, created perpetual quarrels among us, every one contending for the frying-pan. All the conveniency we had for firing, was an half tub filled with earth, which made our cooking so tedious, that



A. D. 1720. that we had a continual noise of frying from morning till night. In a word, for the meagre, hungry, savage looks of the people, for the dangerous uncertainty how our vessel might prove, for want of all necessary accommodations, and wholesome sufficiency of palatable provisions, and, in all other respects, it may be truly said, that no men could have hazarded their lives on the seas, especially with a warlike intent, in a more wretched and miserable manner.

Thus we launched into the ocean with some satisfaction at the thought of being got, once more, afloat again ; but this pleasure was checked by the undoubted certainty of enduring much greater calamities at sea, than ever we did on the island, if something did not speedily fall into our hands. I therefore proposed that we should stand to the South-eastward for the bay of Conception, that being the nearest port to us. Every day, while the sea-breeze continued, we were hard put to it, for not having above sixteen inches free board, and our bark tumbling prodigiously, the water continually ran over us, and having only a grating deck, and no tarpaulin to cover it, except the bark's topsail, which was but thin, our pumps would but just keep us free,  
but

but still I was unwilling to ease her by bearing away, the port of Conception being what we chiefly depended on.

A. D.

1720.

October the tenth, which was the fourth day of our new expedition, at four in the morning, we fell in with a great ship, and by the moon-light I could plainly see she was Europe built. This struck me with a dread of her being a man of war, however, since it was now in vain to look behind us, and our case being desperate, I stood for her, and we being rigged like the small craft of the country, they did not regard us till day-light, which coming on before we could get quite up with her, the enemy discovered the brownness of our canvas (their sails being always made of cotton, which is very white) and immediately suspecting us, wore ship, and hauled close on a wind to the Westward. This done, they hoisted their colours, fired a gun, and crouded away from us at a great rate; but in about two hours it fell calm, and we had recourse to our oars, and rowed after them at a pretty good rate. In the mean time we overhauled our arms, which we found to be in very bad condition, one third of them being without flints, and we had but three cutlasses; so that we were but ill prepared for boarding, which

A. D. which was the only means we could have of  
 1720. taking any ship. We had but one small cannon, which we could not mount, and therefore were obliged to fire it as it lay along on the deck; and to supply it we had no more ammunition than two round shot, a few chain-bolts and bolt-heads, the clapper of the Speedwell's bell, and some bags of beach stones to

Engagement  
 with a Spanish  
 ship called the  
 Margarita.

serve for partridge. In about four hours we came up with this ship, and every one seemed as easy in his mind; as if actually in possession of her. We were only sorry she was not deeper laden than she seemed to be. But as we advanced nearer, I saw her guns and petereroes, and a considerable number of men upon deck, with their arms glittering in the sun. Though I did not like this sight, I did my utmost to encourage my people to bear up against it, and desired them to think of handling their arms, which we had no sooner done, than the enemy called out to us by the name of English Dogs, defying us, in a scornful way, to come on board of them, and at the same time gave us a volley of great and small shot, which killed our gunner, and almost brought our fore-mast by the board. This warm reception staggered a great many of my men, who  
 before

A. D.

1720.

before seemed the forwardest, insomuch that they lay upon their oars for some time, in spite of all I could do to make them keep their way. We recovered ourselves again, and rowed close up with the enemy, and engaged them till all our small shot was expended, which obliged us to fall a-stern to make some flugs. In this manner we made three attempts, and with no better success. I could not think of such a fool hardy butchery as I must have exposed the people to, if we had attempted to board a ship so lofty to us, who, when they had entered, must have gone to handy cuffs with the enemy, having no pistols or cutlasses, which are the only weapons for a close fight.

All the night it was calm, only now and then a faint breeze would waft the enemy a little from us ; but we as often made amends for that by rowing after them. All this while we were busied in making flugs, and had provided a large quantity by the next morning, when we came to a final determination of either carrying this ship, or of submitting to her, and accordingly at day-break, I ordered twenty men in our yaul (which we always kept in tow) to lay her athwart the hawse, whilst

A. D. whilst I boarded her in the bark. The people in the boat put off, giving me repeated assurances of their good behaviour. But at 1720. the very juncture we were coming to action, She gets clear of us. a gale sprang up, and she went away from us. As the gale freshened, I expected every moment she would have come down upon us, and run over us, which she might very easily have done ; but instead of that, she held her way to the Northward, which I took to be a feint, and could not but think she would go to Valparaíso (which was the next port) to alarm the coast. I therefore steered all night for that harbour, in hopes to catch her again, in the morning, becalmed under the land, and, at day-light had sight of her, within us, steering for that place : But the enemy no sooner discovered us, than he immediately hauled to the Northward again, and continued his course along shore till he was out of sight. Upon this I judged he was gone to Coquimbo, which would have happened the best for us, because as Valparaíso is a place of considerable strength, we could have had little hopes of doing any thing there.

This ship was called the *Margarita*, and was the same which had been a privateer belonging to St. Maloes and mounted forty guns  
all

all the last war. In the skirmishes we had with her, we had none killed, except Gilbert Henderfon, our gunner, and three wounded, which were Mr. Brooks, first lieutenant, through the thigh, Mr. Coldsea, the master, through the groin, and one of the fore-mast men through the small of his back. Two of these did very well, and I think there was something extraordinary in their cure; for the surgeon had nothing to apply to their wounds, but what he himself had prepared with seal's oil, and other matters he had found on the island; Mr. Coldsea, indeed, lingered in a miserable manner for nine or ten months afterwards; but at length recovered.

Our condition now grew worse and worse; for we could not understand this piece of courage in the Spaniards. I gave it as my opinion, they must have had European officers on board, because the Creolians were scarce ever known to be so hardy. These seas besides, being too rough for our uncomfortable vessel, I proposed that we should get into fairer weather, but to take Coquimbo in our way, to try what we could do there. This was agreed to, but the very day we expected to go into Coquimbo, there came on a very hard gale of wind, which lasted

A. D.

1720.

The damage we sustained by this engagement.

Came to a resolution of going to Coquimbo on the coast of Chili, but are blown past it by a violent storm.

T

four

A. D. four days without ceasing. During all this  
1720. time we had not an hour's hopes of living  
a minute. We were obliged to scud away  
under bare poles, with our yaul in tow, and  
having but a short scope of boat-rope for her,  
we were, on the descent of every sea, in the  
greatest danger of having the bark's stern beat  
in by the violence of the boat's precipi-  
tate fall after us, and once in particular, a  
great hollow sea had like to have thrown her  
upon our deck, which would have put an end  
to all our voyage. The excessive fright of  
this storm, which appeared the more violent,  
by as much as our embarkation was but little  
able to live in the midst of it, made many of  
the people form a resolution of going on  
shore by the very first opportunity they could  
lay hold of.

Thus baulked in our design on Coquimbo,  
and every one almost fatigued out of his life  
by always lying wet, and near starving with  
the small allowance of such poor unfavoury  
food as we had for our subsistence, I had no  
room left to give the people any further hopes ;  
till, at length, calling to mind Monsieur Fre-  
zier's account of the island of Iquique, I  
mentioned the surprisal of that place to them,  
it being but a small lieutenancy, and where  
we

we might, in all probability, get some wholesome provisions, and a better bottom than our own. Every one approved of this, and the sun shining upon us, and lying dry again, we got into some spirits, and directed our course for that island.

A. D.

1720.

Form a resolution of surprising the island of Iquique, on the coast of Peru.

In our way thither, we had a view of the small island of Pavillion, so called from its near resemblance to a tent, situated close to the continent, in the latitude of twenty-one degrees South. The evening after this, we saw Iquique, which appears to be no other

Arrival in sight of Iquique.

than a white rock at the foot of the high land of Carapucho. It was three weeks before we got this length, and having nothing to ride the bark with, we were obliged to keep the sea with her, whilst the boat went in, though dreading by what we saw, that such a place must be certainly uninhabited, and, even if it was the right place, we could plainly perceive, there was no ship at anchor there. It was sun-set before the boat departed, and endeavouring to land under the covert of the night, they had like to have been lost amongst the breakers; and after all they could see, for a long time, were under a suspense that this could not be the place we sought after, until they heard the barking of dogs,



A. D. and perceived the light of some candles. As  
 1720. they had experienced the hazard of landing  
 in the dark, they made their boat fast to a  
 float of sea-weeds for want of a graplin ; and in  
 this posture they lay till the light of the morn-  
 ing, by which they rowed in to shore between  
 the rocks, and were received by some Indi-

We take the lieutenantancy of Iquique. ans on the strand, with a sort of welcome.  
 Being on shore, they went to the lieutenant's  
 house, broke it open, and rummaged the

What we got there.

whole village, and found a booty more valu-  
 able to us, at that time, than gold or silver.  
 It consisted of about sixty bushels of wheat  
 flour, one hundred and twenty of calavances  
 and corn, some jerked beef, pork and mut-  
 ton, some thousand weight of well cured fish,  
 a good number of fowls, some rusk, and four  
 or five days eating of soft bread, together  
 with five or six jars of Peruvian wine or bran-  
 dy ; and, to crown all, they had the good for-  
 tune to find a large boat near the shore, to bring  
 off their booty with, which otherwise would  
 have been of little use to us, our own boat  
 being already sufficiently laden with men.

Mean while we in the bark were carried a-  
 way to the Northward by the current, out of  
 sight of the island, and the people on shore  
 not having laden their boats before the heat  
 of

of the day, had a laborious and sultry task of it, to row off their heavy laden boats so far in a tumbling swell, whilst we in the bark were encountering with the melancholy apprehensions, that our people, not finding any thing considerable, had taken it into their heads to stay on shore and desert us. But these clouds were dispersed, when towards the evening, I perceived two boats approaching us very fast, and discovered them to be as heavy laden as they could safely be. Words can't express the joy that reigned amongst us when they came on board; the scene was now changed from famine to plenty, the loaves of soft bread were distributed to every one, and the jars of wine were broached. But I took care they should drink but moderately of it, each man having no more than half a pint for his share; and after a day or two's living on wholsom diet, we wondered how our stomachs had been able to digest our rank and nauseous eels, fried in train oil, and could hardly believe we had lived upon nothing else for a month past.

Mr. Randall, our second lieutenant, who commanded in this enterprize, told me, they did not meet with the least opposition, and that the few Indians they found, seemed to

A. D. be as glad of this opportunity of pillaging  
1720. the Spaniards, as we were.

*Description of the island of Iquique, and  
the high land of Carapucho, in the  
latitude of nineteen degrees, fifty  
minutes South, on the coast of Peru.*

THIS island, in the latitude of nineteen degrees, fifty minutes South, is situated at the foot of the high land of Carapucho, on the continent of Peru ; it is about a mile and an half in circumference, and half a mile from the main land ; and the channel between them is full of rocks.

The island is of a moderate height, and the whole body of it consists of the dung of cormorants, a kind of sea-bird very numerous on this coast. Some will have it to be a particular sort of earth ; but the most probable and certain conjecture is, that it is the dung of birds. 'Tis not in this place only that one sees large quantities of it, but all along the coast of Peru, there are lofty precipices and large rocks near the sea, cas'd over with it, so that at a distance they appear like chalk cliffs. That there should be a greater portion of it here than  
on

on any other part of the coast, may be accounted for by the observations made by the Spaniards, who are said to agree, that these birds are more numerous in and about the latitude of this place, than elsewhere; and to confirm the truth of it, they farther report, that after having dug to a considerable depth, they have found birds feathers. As to a nice enquiry into this, our affairs would not permit it. All I can affirm of it is, that the smell of it is very offensive, and they load several ships with it every year, for the plantations of cod-pepper at Arica. There are no inhabitants on it but negro slaves, who cleanse and prepare it in large heaps near the shore, ready for boats and other vessels to take it off. As to the village, where the lieutenant resides, that is on the continent, close by the sea-side. It consists of about sixty scattered ill built houses, which hardly deserve that name, and a small church. There is not the least verdure to be seen in or about it, nor does it afford the least necessary, of life, of its own product, not even water, which they are obliged to fetch from the Quebrada or break of Pisagua in boats ten leagues to the Northward. Being therefore a place so truly miserable in itself, we may conclude, that the advantage or pro-

A. D.

1720.

fit accruing to them by means of the Guano or cormorant's dung, is the only inducement to bring inhabitants to this place, which seems in itself as if ordained by nature unfit to receive them; not only on account of the frightful barrenness of the spot, but also for the filthy scent of the island so near it. This last inconvenience was what, I suppose, led them to the contrivance of building their habitations on the main land, which though it be a situation as hideous as can be imagined, and not wholly out of the stench of the offensive vapours of the isle of Iquique, yet was the better choice of the two, and not quite so suffocating. But although the land is so desert and forbidding, the sea about it affords a very plentiful quantity of two or three sorts of excellent fish, of such kinds as I never saw before. One of them is nearest like to a silver eel, though much thicker in proportion to its length; these, and the rest, equally delicious, they preserve in a very neat, cleanly manner, and export great quantities of it, by the ships which come for the Guano.

By two Indian prisoners we took here, we were informed that the lieutenant of Iquique had a boat at Pisagua, which was sent for  
water,

water, and we beginning to stand in need of it, I sent Mr. Randall, our second lieutenant, in quest of her: but this failed; nevertheless, though they missed the vessel, they landed in a dangerous manner, on a sort of floats called balses, much in use on this coast. They brought off only a few bladders of water and three or four balses, which are composed of two seal skins very artificially sewed up, and filled with wind, and made fast along-side of each other. On these the rower sits looking forward, with a double paddle, and as fast as he can perceive the wind to escape from the skins, he adds a supply of it by a contrivance for that purpose. These balses are the chief embarkations made use of by the fishermen, and are serviceable for landing on this coast, which has hardly one smooth beach from the one end of it to the other.

There was now no talk among us of going on shore; but, on the contrary, we should have looked into Arica, had we not been informed there was a ship of force lying there. This caused us to steer wide of that port, and determine to make some attempt in the road of le Nasco, in the latitude of about sixteen degrees, South, and Pisco in the latitude of thirteen degrees, forty-five minutes, South.

Both

A. D.

1720.

Mr. Randall, second lieutenant sent to take a boat laden with water at the break of Pifagua.

- A. D. Both these places are noted for their exportation of wines and brandy.

Engagement  
with the Fran-  
cisco Palacio  
near the port  
of le Nasco.

The very morning we came off the Sierra or high land of le Nasco, two hours before day-light, we fell in with a large ship. The circumstances of our meeting and engaging with this ship were, in some measure, the same with those we had with the Margarita. We met with both at the same time of the morning, and both had the misfortune of being becalmed whilst we were in pursuit of them. About ten in the morning we rowed up with them, whilst they threw over-board a great quantity of lumber which pestered their decks. I shall not relate the confusion amongst us, only in brief acquaint my reader, that we struggled with her for six or seven hours, and were, at length, obliged to leave her, because the sea-breeze came in so strong, and the sea ran so high, that had she been of no force, our slight bark must have been in pieces before a third part of us could have entered her. This ship was called the St. Francisco Palacio, of seven hundred tons, eight guns, and ten petereroes, a great number of men, and well provided with small arms. Although she was so deeply laden, that, as she rolled, the water ran through her scuppers

scuppers over her upper deck ; yet, having a very deep waste, she appeared very lofty, especially abaft, where she had more resemblance of an ill-contrived wooden castle, than of such a part of a ship, according to the fashion of building at present in Europe.

A. D.

1720.

But miss taking her.

It happened very hard that we should thus meet with two of the best equipped ships in the private trade, at that time, in the South Seas. In this action we had not above twenty small arms that were of use, which was the effect of their inconsiderate proceedings on Juan Fernandes. This last repulse was made a pretence for much murmuring and uneasiness, many despairing that we should ever take any thing as our condition was at that time, became inclinable to submit to the enemy, who was all the night becalmed near us. To prevent the design of such who were so disposed, I took care to remove the two boats out of their power, by ordering two men in each of them, such as I thought I could trust, and to cast off from us at a little distance, that none might escape in them ; but notwithstanding the confidence I had reposed in these four, the two in the best boat deceived me by going away with her, which was a great loss to us, and added much to our misfortune

Which is made a pretence for much discontent amongst some of the people.

Two of my men desert in the best boat in the night.

in



- A. D. 1720. in being discovered so near to the port of Cal-lao, where they must hear of it in a day or two. The day after I was informed, that the first lieutenant and Morpew had made a party, too strong for me to oppose, to go away with the boat that was left; but it blowing fresh the next night, they were hindered from executing their design.



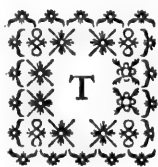
S E C T.

on  
our  
I w  
solu  
wh  
tow  
wo  
tam  
ann  
to p  
once



## S E C T. VIII.

*Arrival in the road of Pisco, in the latitude of thirteen degrees forty-five minutes South on the coast of Peru, where we take a Spanish ship called, the Jesus Maria.*



THE next day we stood into the road of Pisco, as we had designed, where we discovered, what appeared to be, a large ship. Upon the sight of this, I talked to Mr. Brooks, our first lieutenant, and told him, that tho' I was no stranger to his and his associates resolution about the boat, I hoped that in this, which might be the last effort we could make towards the preservation of our liberty, they would behave themselves like men, and not tamely submit whilst we had any lead left to annoy the enemy with ; and desired every one to prepare himself for boarding this ship at once. This being agreed on, we bore down

to

A D. to her with a resolute despair, and laid her  
1720. athwart the hawse; but to my great satisfacti-  
on, we met with no resistance, and were re-  
ceived by the captain, and his officers, with  
their hats off, in the most submissive manner,  
asking for quarter.

Before we came the length of this ship, I  
had ordered our boat to intercept theirs, which  
I perceived to be going on shore. They clapped  
her on board, but not holding fast, they  
fell astern, and could not fetch up with her  
again, not offering to fire a musquet to bring  
them to, so that in this boat, they conveyed  
away every thing that might have been valu-  
able in this prize. She was a good ship, of  
about two hundred tons, called the *Jesus Ma-*  
*ria*, almost laden with pitch, tar, copper and  
plank, but nothing else. The captain offer-  
ed sixteen thousand dollars for her ransom,  
but I could not give ear to it, by reason the  
*Recovery* was disabled in her masts by board-  
ing, and not only that, but I was also hin-  
dered by the consideration that now we had  
room enough to enjoy ourselves in, with some  
cleanliness at least, an article we had been per-  
fect strangers to, ever since we had departed  
from the island of *Juan Fernandes*.

We

We therefore made all the dispatch we could in getting every thing out of the bark. The Spanish captain informed me, that the Margarita had been arrived some time at Callao, where she had given a full account of us; that the captain of her, and three more were killed in the action with us, and that the Priest, and several others were wounded, and that she was now ready to put to sea again with an addition of ten guns and fifty men to cruise for us; and, moreover, that the Flying-fish, a frigate of twenty-eight guns was already out with the same intent, and that there was advice of us sent both ways along shore, and commissions to equip what strength they had to catch us.

All the night they were upon the watch at the town of Pisco, making a shew, by the continual firing of guns, as meaning thereby to give us an idea of what we must expect if we should dare to attempt a descent upon them. But they might have eased themselves of those apprehensions, for we had enough to do to prepare for our departure the next day, being now, as it were, in the very jaws of our enemies, which, by the advice I had received, were ready, on all sides, to devour us, and from whom nothing could preserve us but  
great

A. D. great wariness in going out to sea from hence.

1720. Having cleared our bark the next morning, we gave her to the Spanish captain, and as soon as the breeze sprung up, we weighed, and went to sea, and in going out met with

Recover our  
boat and two  
deserters.

our boat, which I have mentioned to have left us in the night; they edged towards us, imagining we were Spaniards, by which means we got them again. The two fellows in her were almost dead, having neither eaten nor drank any thing for three days past, and had just been ashore on a small island, near this harbour, to kill some seals to drink their blood; they had no excuse for themselves, but that they fell asleep, and the faint breezes of the night had wafted us in the bark away from them.

I can give no farther description of this place than that the road is spacious and commodious, and that the town seems to be large and pleasantly situated among vineyards and fruit trees. But for an ample and exact account of this, as well as of most of the noted harbours and towns on the coast of Chili and Peru, from the port of Conception to that of Callao, I refer my readers to Monsieur Frezier's voyage, who having had the best opportunities of making observations and enquiries into every

every thing relating thereto, that might be useful and entertaining to our Europeans, as far as he went, has been, as far as I know, very just and particular in his relations and descriptions of places.

A. D.

1720.

*Voyage continued in the JESUS MARIA.*

Pisco being forty leagues to the windward of Callao, I kept close hauled till I had gained a two degrees offing, and kept that distance till we had got well to the Northward of Callao, and hauled in again for the land, a little to the Southward of Truxillo, and looked into the roads of Guanchaco, Malabriga and Cheripe, but seeing no ship at those places, I made no stay there, and passed between the island of Lobos de Tierra and the continent.

On November the twenty-fifth, in the evening, we found ourselves near the Saddle of Payta, and having been here before, I imagined that, though our force was much diminished since we last took it, we might, without any hazard, surprize the inhabitants in the night; accordingly we endeavoured to get in with the ship: But it growing calm, and having been discouraged from making

U

too

- A. D. 1720. too free with the land in the dark, by the dangers we had almost run ourselves into of being on shore amongst the rocks, it was thought properest to defer our attempt till morning, since our disguise of being in a Spanish-built ship would be sufficient to blind the inhabitants, and make it very difficult, if not impossible, for them to suspect us.



S E C T.



## S E C T. X.

*Our second Arrival in the cove of Payta, in the latitude of five degrees, fifteen minutes South, on the coast of Peru, which Town we take a second time by stratagem.*

IN the morning it blew fresh off from the land, and we had a tiresome piece of work of it in getting into the cove, which being opened to us, we saw a small ship at anchor there. The people on shore observing the fatigue we underwent, the greatest part of the morning, in making so many short trips to gain ground to windward, that we might get to an anchor, sent off a large boat full of men, to help us to bring in our ship, and enquire news of us. As soon as we saw them making towards us, I ordered that none should be seen upon our deck, but such as came nearest to the Spanish complexion and dress, who should be ready to



A. D. 1720. answer what questions they might ask in hailing of us, and to give them a rope to make fast their boat with, when they clapped us on board, whilst some should be concealed under the gunwale with musquets ready to point into their boat and command them in, as soon as they had so made themselves fast. This stratagem had its intended effect. I examined the prisoners concerning the condition of the town, which they answered was very poor at present, there being neither money nor provisions in it, and shewed me a small bark on the shore, which captain Clipperton had sent in here, a little while before, with some of his prisoners, which had given them such an alarm, that every thing had been again removed into the country. This unwelcome news did not hinder us from keeping on our way, with our Spanish colours flying, till we came to the place of anchorage.

No sooner was our anchor down, than I sent away Mr. Brooks, with both the boats, armed with twenty-four men, no more of them, however, appearing, than those who rowed, and two or three fitters in each, the rest, with their arms, lying in the bottom of the boats. Thus they advanced towards the town, without giving the least umbrage to  
the

A. D.

1720.

the inhabitants, who were so thoroughly unconcerned at it, that when my people landed, they found the children playing on the beach, who were the first that took the alarm, and ran away at the sight of armed men. In an instant the whole place was in confusion, and happy was the man who could make his escape, without any regard to wives or children, who were left to shift for themselves, by making what haste they could to get out of the way. They were all dispersed and in all the directions of the compass; ours were the same, who not being able to determine which parcel of them was the most worth pursuit, followed them as their fancy suggested, and, by that means, we took but few prisoners. Some women were overtaken, and after being searched, had their liberty restored to them. The town being left destitute, and the enemy being too nimble of foot for ours to overtake them, they returned to Payta, and, upon a strict search, they found our prisoners had not said amiss in affirming that the place was poor, for they could find nothing in it but a few bales of coarse cloth, about five hundred weight of dried tole or dog-fish, two or three pedlars packs, and an inconsiderable quantity

A. D.

1720.

of bread and sweetmeats ; so that we unluckily had but little employment for our boats. But though we had so little success in our land enterprize, we took a booty as we lay at anchor in the ship, which might have been made valuable, if discretion and prudence had had the management of it ; for want of which it proved a troublesome incendiary. This was a small vessel, who coming in about eight in the evening, and advancing so near to us as to be within reach of our musquets, we with them commanded her on board of us. She had nothing in her but about fifty jars of Peravian wine and brandy. The master of her told me he was come by stealth from Callao, there being orders that none but ships of some force should stir out. He likewise told me the same story the captain of the *Jesus Maria* had before, and with dissembled concern, gave me to understand, it would be next to impossible for me to get off from the coast without being taken. This man was the first who acquainted me with my second captain's (*Hatley*) being taken, and the value of his prizes, as I have already mentioned in the former part of this relation, and likewise assured me, we had killed and wounded several in our action  
with

with the Spanish admiral, and that the officers belonging to her, had suffered much blame and scandal for their tardy behaviour in attacking us.

A. D.

1720.

But to return to the town, my people who had all to themselves, were in no great hurry to quit it, and it being now dark, some of the Spaniards who were lurking about the outskirts of the town, hearing so many small arms fired in the road, instantly concluded our ship was attacked, and were in hopes that some of their men of war were come in again to deliver them from the hands of their enemies. Upon these false surmises they began to assemble together, and being apprized of the small number of English on shore (who did not exceed eighteen) came down the hills with great uproar and fury. My people thought themselves on the brink of ruin when they heard them calling out to one another by fictitious names and qualities, one calling to captain Martin with great heat, to march with his two hundred men to the Northward of the town, and to captain Francisco to march with his company to intercept their passage to their boat; whilst a third was to drive them out of the town. At first my people, not doubting they were in earnest,

The Spaniards by stratagem drive us out of the town that night.

A. D. 1720. took refuge in the biggest church, resolving to defend themselves there; but, at length, taking courage, they marched out, and formed themselves in a line, and kept their drum beating very resolutely, and one of them firing a single musquet at random, they spoiled the stratagem, heard no more of them, and embarked very quietly.

The next morning we departed, reflecting on our misfortune to have this place a second time alarmed by Clipperton, who never offered to make a descent here, though, in his scheme, the taking of this town is mentioned as a thing of great importance; and indeed so it might have been to him, if he had landed the first time he was here, when there was four hundred thousand pieces of Eight in it, (as I have been credibly informed by prisoners) besides a great quantity of jesuits bark and other valuable commodities. Some of the king of Spain's treasure is frequently lodged in the governour's care; and if he had attempted them, even the second time, it would have been worth his while. As for Collan, which is two miles to the Northward of this, situated near the mouth of a little river, it is a mean place, being entirely inhabited by Indians.

*Description*

A. D.

1720.

*Description of the town of Payta, in the latitude of five degrees, fifteen minutes South, on the coast of Peru.*

THIS town, in the latitude of five degrees, fifteen minutes, South, on the coast of Peru, is seated in the bottom of a round cove of about a mile in breadth, which is in the South-eastermost part of a great bay, of seven leagues in breadth, formed between the point of Agujo to the Southward, and the point of Parina to the Northward. As to the Saddle of Payta, given as a sure mark for knowing this place by, it is far from being so; for the high land of Motapa, over the point of Parina, may be easily mistaken for it, by such as are not well acquainted with it, as happened to me. The truth is, they have given a very improper appellation of a saddle, to the mountain over point Agujo, because it does not bear the least resemblance of any thing that might give it that name among seamen, and therefore you must not expect the shape of this mountain to answer so exactly to what you would expect to see. Take notice rather of the small island of Lobos de Payta, lying a little way off of the point of Agujo, which

- A. D. 1720. which having remarked, keep the Southern side of the bay close on board, and make bold with the shore, which affords a rocky wild prospect. When you have got half way on this shore, you will see the Pena Oradada, or *Hole in the rock*, which is a sure mark that you are within half a league of the cove of Payta, and continuing your rout to the Eastward, you will discover the town of Payta itself, containing about two hundred houses of all sorts, and two neat churches, the largest of which is separated from the Eastern end of the town. The churches are well adorned within, with several handsome altars, indifferently painted and carved, but richly gilt, and in all respects, beyond any thing one would expect from a first view of the place, which is low and ill built with unburnt brick, the roofs of some of which are covered with mats, and others miserably thatched. The insides of them were little better in the state they left them in for us; the governor's house indeed has three or four handsome apartments in it, adorned with good joiner's work. Close behind the town to the south, is a high sandy hill, round at top, on which are fixed three large wooden crosses in a row. The whole country, whether hill or valley, about it, appears as if parched up, and

A. D.

1720.

and never moistened by the descent of rain; so that there is not any thing green to be seen around it, the land all about being productive of no one necessary. They have not so much as water, which is brought to them in jars upon bark-logs, from Collan (which I have before mentioned) as well as almost every thing else; so that there is nothing to recommend this desert but the commodiousness of the harbour, which makes it a kind of baiting place for the ships trading to leeward on this coast, and the inhabitants provide refreshments for them from all the other adjacent parts.

The inhabitants here, as well as in most of the Spanish colonies in America, are a mixed breed of all colours, the least part of them Whites. They carry on, by the help of shipping that come in by chance, a commerce of whatever is brought from the parts they frequent, wherewith they supply some inland towns near, and the neighbouring small ports, which are less, if at all frequented. The supine neglect of the Spaniards may be seen in the little care they take of fortifying this place to protect the inhabitants from the ravages they are always exposed to in a war, as well as the ships, which are some of their richest merchantmen,



- A D. merchantmen, who generally stop here; but  
 1720. it is not this place only which is, as it were, disregarded by them, but also many others, even of note, both on this coast, and that of Chili; and those which are fortified, are running to ruin as fast as time can effect it, which will be very soon, except quickly prevented.

*Voyage continued.*

From hence we directed our course for the island of Gorgona, in the bay of Panama, and in our passage thither built a tank, or wooden cistern, big enough to hold ten tons of water, wherewith to supply our want of casks, as without the help of some such contrivance, we could have but little hopes of being ever able to depart from these coasts. In our way we made the island of Plate, Cape St. Francis, and Gorgonella, or little Gorgona, and on the second of December we arrived at the island of Gorgona itself, and came to an anchor to the leeward of the Northernmost point of it, in forty fathom water, and within less than a quarter of a mile of the shore. Here we had the advantage of filling our water casks in the boat, the water running in small streams into the sea, and cut down our wood

Arrive at the  
 the island of  
 Gorgona,  
 where we  
 wood and wa-  
 ter in forty-  
 eight hours.

wood at high water mark, so that in less than forty-eight hours we had done our business here.

A. D.

1720.

Here seems to be a convenient place to lay a ship on shore at, as the water flows above fourteen feet. The island is about two leagues and a half in circumference; it produces a great variety of large trees, fit for all uses. At the North and South ends of it are several high rocks, on which the birds called Boobies build their nests, and during the short stay we made here, their young ones were valuable to us, of which we made ragouts and soups. Here are monkeys and guances in abundance, and near the North end of this Isle there is a rocky cave, the rendezvous of great numbers of bats.

From this place we hurried away to sea for fear of those who might be in quest of us, and having got out of the track of the enemies ships, we consulted on the best methods of proceeding, and the majority (considering the small likelihood of avoiding the enemy if we staid any longer in these parts) were for going directly over to the coasts of Asia. Upon this we changed our ship's name from the *Jesus Maria* to the *Happy Return*, and applied all our endeavours towards abandoning

We endeavour to quit the coast of America, to go to India.

A. D.  
1720.

doning these coasts; but the winds and currents were averſe to it, and ſome of thoſe who oppoſed our departure from theſe ſeas, did ſo much damage clandeſtinely to our tank, that the greateſt part of our water leaked out.

But are prevented by contrary winds.

This, together with continual contrary winds and dead calms, which had detained us till our proviſions were much exhausted, rendered us incapable to undertake ſo long a run as to the Eaſt Indies; therefore to furniſh ourſelves with what we wanted, I propoſed a deſcent on Rio Lego, in the latitude of eleven degrees fifty minutes North, on the coaſt of Mexico: But in our way thither, we accidentally fell in with Cape Burica, in the latitude of eight degrees twenty minutes North, and then, on ſecond thoughts, I judged it

Direct our course for the island of Quibo.

would be ſafer for us to make ſome attempt on the iſland of Quibo, in the latitude of ſeven degrees thirty minutes North, where, by captain Rogers's account, I gueſſed there muſt be inhabitants who lived in a plentiful manner on the product of that iſland; wherefore we ſteered for that place, and the next day made the iſle of Montuoſo, ſo called from its appearing like a ſingle mountain in the middle of the ſea, lying about five leagues to the weſtward of the iſland of Quibo.

S E C T



## S E C T. XI.

*Arrival at the island of Quibo, in the latitude of seven degrees thirty minutes North, on the Western coast of Mexico; our transactions both there, and at point Mariato, in the gulph of St. Martin.*

 N January the thirteenth, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-one, we anchored between the North East point of the island of Quibo and the isle of Quivetta, in twenty fathom water, over-against a sandy bay, commodious for wooding and watering; but our boat, which I sent before us, told me, that on the parts of it they had seen, they could perceive no footsteps of inhabitants, nor any sign of such, excepting two or three huts near the water-side, which they supposed were made use of by pearl-fishers, there being great heaps of mother of pearl shells about them; but that there

A. D. there was a good close harbour a little to the  
1720. southward of us. However I did not care  
to make use of it, being unwilling to be  
closely confined.

At day-light, the next morning, we saw  
two large piraguas rowing in for the isle of  
Quivetta, one of them with Spanish colours  
flying. This bearing a warlike appearance,  
I imagined they might be come from the  
main to view us, and perhaps, have an in-  
clination to try their skill with us. The  
Mullattoes, on the coast of Mexico, are  
noted for their courage, and have done ma-  
ny resolute actions in boats and small embark-  
ations; but these continued their way till we  
saw them go into a small Cove on Quivetta,  
and, after a little debate whether it would be  
prudent for us to attack them in our boat or  
not, it was resolved, at all hazards, to go  
after them in our yaul. This enterprize  
was commanded by Mr. Brooks, our first  
lieutenant, who found them all on shore,  
brought away their piraguas, and two pri-  
soners, the one a Mullatto, the other a Ne-  
gro, the rest sought for refuge in the woods.

We took from them all their provisions,  
which consisted of a little pork, and some  
green, ripe and dried plantains. There was

a large quantity of the latter, which being pounded, made a grateful flour to the taste, indifferently white, and all-together made up a month's bread, I mean we ate it instead of bread. The Mulatto mortified us very much, by telling us, that a vessel laden with provisions, had passed by very near us in the night ; but to make amends, promised to conduct us to a place where we might supply ourselves therewith, without any hazard, provided we were not above two or three days about it. No news could be more welcome to us than this, wherefore we were very brisk in getting off our wood and water. However, we could not but recollect and consider that there were between twenty and thirty men on Quivetta, who were destitute of any provisions but the wild fruits of the island, and without any embarkation to convey them from thence. Wherefore, since we could not spare them one of our boats to get off with, which we should want ourselves to ship off our expected booty, in our approaching enterprise ; I sent an officer, and nine or ten men to treat with them, and, in case they should be afraid to come near us, to set up on the beach where we surprized them, a small cross with a little picture of the Virgin Mary fastened

A. D.  
1721.

ened to it, with a paper written in such wretched Spanish as we could muster up amongst us, to assure them they should meet with generous quarter, and to persuade them not to suffer voluntarily such hardships, as they must if they did not submit, and make signals for us to fetch them off before we weighed our anchor. The boat went on this errand, and not seeing any of them, our people went into the woods and halloo'd to them, but they returning no answer, they fixed the cross, picture, and paper, as was ordered, and came away, and those on the isle being so stubborn as not to make any signals to us for assistance, we on the sixteenth of January, weighed from hence for Mariato, that being the place we were now bound to.

In going out from Quibo, we were in imminent danger of being horsed by the current upon two rocks, lying at a small distance one from another, off the Northermost point of Quivetta, but having cleared them, we steered through Canal Bueno, or the Good Channel, so called from its safety, being free from dangerous shoals and rocks. It might as properly be called the Streights of Quibo, which forms the Western side of it, extending about nine or ten leagues from North to South.

Over-

Over-against the South entrance of these streights, at the distance of a league from point Mariato, which is the Westermost point of the gulph of St. Martin, lies the island of Sebaco, which is, to the best of my judgment, about ten leagues in circumference. I ran along the South end of it, and found every point flat, at least a league from the shore. This being a navigation very little known, I took all imaginable precaution in keeping hands at the masts heads, to discover any rippling or discoloured water, in time. On January the nineteenth, in the evening, we got safe in between Mariato and the island of Sebaco, and anchored in six fathom water, over-against a green field, which is instruction sufficient, there being but that clear spot hereabouts. Our pilot desired we might be going at least three hours before daylight, and that then we should be in good time at the plantations; accordingly I went away at two the next morning, in our own boat, and ordered the two lieutenants in the two piraguas, leaving my son, and a few with him, to take care of the ship. Our pilot having us in charge, carried us up some part of the river of St. Martin, and out of that into several branches of very narrow creeks



A. D. 1721. amongst Mangroves, where we had not room to row.

I could by no means approve of this navigation, and therefore kept a strict eye upon our guide, and was ready to suspect he had no good design in his head; but we landed just at day-break, and, when we came on the bank, found ourselves on a fine Savannah or plain; and after a march of about three miles, came to two farm-houses, but those belonging to them made their escape, except the wife and children of one house.

We had the satisfaction of seeing this place answer to the description that had been given us of it, being surrounded by numerous heads of black cattle, hogs, and plenty of fowls of all sorts; and here we found some dried beef, plantains, and Indian corn; and, for present use, were entertained with a wholesome breakfast of hot cake and milk, a diet we had been long unacquainted with. When it came to be broad day, I saw our ship close by us, upon which I asked our Mulatto, How he came to bring us so far about? He answered there was a river between us, and he did not know whether it was fordable or not. I therefore sent some to try, who found it was not above knee deep. Wherefore

A. D.

1721.

fore to avoid the trouble of carrying our plunder so far by land and water, as we had been led, I ordered that our boats should row out of the river of St. Martin, and come to the beach over-against the ship. We had not been long here before the master of the family we had in custody, being willing to undergo the same fate with them; or to release them by the merit of such services as he could oblige us with, brought some horses with him, and desired we would make use of him as far as he could serve us. This offer was kindly received, and I presently employed him to carry what I thought fit to our boat. This done, he went among his black cattle, and brought us what number of them I thought we could save; for we had but little salt to save them with, and I could not afford water to keep them alive when we came to sea; so that as soon as they were on board they were killed. Their flesh we preserved by cutting it into long slips of the thickness of a finger, and then sprinkling it with so small a quantity of salt, that we did not use above four or five pounds to a hundred weight, and having let it lye together two or three hours, we hung it up to dry in the sun, two or three days successively, which perfectly saved it, and

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

could not have been done, any other way, by any quantity of the best salt.

But to return to our Indian farmer, after he had laboured all the day in doing us all the service he could, I took him on board with us at night, and there treated him so well, and engaged him so far by some trifling presents, that I may venture to assure my countrymen, that any of them will be welcome to him for the time to come. And I really would recommend this place to any who hereafter may be sent to cruize in these parts, in case they should find themselves short of provisions.

This place, as I before said, is near to the point of Mariato, which is the Westermost land of the gulph of St. Martin; and when you come to anchor, as I have directed, you will not only see the plain, but also two or three white houses, which we could not distinctly observe at first, because we came to just at the close of day light. These farms, when I was there, belonged to a rich Spanish curate, who lived at the city of Santa Maria. What cattle there is, is mightily exposed to the ravages of tygers, who swarm on the coasts of all these parts. But to make amends for that inconvenience, the Indians are

so dextrous and hardy, as to make it no difficulty to destroy them, and are so bold as to attack them as soon as seen, with only a lance in their hands. An instance of this happened the very morning we came upon them, when they had just killed a tyger of no mean size, and flead him; the hide I brought away with me, raw as it was, but the beauty of it was spoiled by the strokes of the lance. In short, the Indians here may be truly called the guardians of their flocks, as they can so daringly cope with the most active and fierce of all beasts, for their preservation; but long use to this sort of work has so inured them to it, that they have little or no dread on them when they are furiously threatened by one of those dangerous creatures, being well assured of their own ability to deal with them.

*Voyage continued.*

Having done all we proposed in coming here, we made no farther stay, but departed from hence the next morning, with our decks full of fowls and hogs, amongst which there was one with its navel or something like it, on its back. The Spaniards say that this, when wild in the woods, is a terrible animal to

A. D.

1721.

meet with, although at full growth it be but small. We returned by the same way that we came, through Canal Bueno, and made a stop at Quibo to compleat our water, and when we sailed, gave our two prisoners we had taken when we first came hither, the largest piragua, that those still remaining on Quivetta, might return from whence they came.

But I must here make a digression to inform my reader, who may imagine we enjoyed a little peace, by what I have said of our proceedings since our last attempt at Payta, that the wine and brandy we had there taken, operated so with my ship's company, as to divide them into two parties, to the last degree inveterate against each other, who used before to be so firmly united: In-  
somuch that I have had, in one night's time, the ringleaders of each of them, desiring me to espouse their cause, each side assuring me the other had a design on my life, and urging me to take the opportunity to make away with those who were not of their faction. It is even unaccountable to myself how the mischief was diverted; for I could use no means with them, but speak calmly to them on both sides, and suffer them (indeed it was  
out

out of my power to hinder it) to get drunk as often as they pleased, and in that condition they have often, and all together been skirmishing with one another; and I have had, more than once, my cloaths torn off my back, in endeavouring to part them. It was happy this trade did not last long, for while they had any thing to drink, I judged it unsafe to lay my head upon my pillow, which almost wearied me out of my life. But their free access to the liquor, shortened the term of this miserable way of passing our time, and though while it held, it was attended by some vexatious effects, yet it had this one good in it, that it helped off with the liquid evil at a great rate. Pinching hunger obliged them to join jointly and vigorously together at Mariato; but after they had glutted themselves a day or two with wholsom food, they relapsed again, and were as distracted as ever, though now in the midst of a moderate plenty,

Those who were the managers on the island of Juan Fernandes, now felt the wretched reward of their own indiscretion, and in return for what they called good offices for the right and interest of the common sort, were obliged to put up with all the insolences that were offered them by the meanest of the ship's company;

A. D.

1721.

company ; and my land gentlemen, or officers of the marines, as they were called, who had been hitherto looked upon as no other than passengers, were now forced to learn to steer, and take their turns at the whipstaff, so promiscuously were the officers of all kinds blended together with the foremast-men. It may be guessed what sort of government there could be in a ship, where the chief officers had debased themselves so low by their mean familiarity, as now to be the scorn and contempt of the most despicable of the crew. And a just reward it was for their ill behaviour, and contempt of discipline and subordination. They had done their best to reduce us into a little republick, and by giving all up to the most unruly of the people, had brought us into such confusion, that (if they had been now ever so willing) it was beyond their cunning or skill either to retrieve their own credit, or do any thing that might be effectual towards setting me up again in my command. For even when our wine and brandy was gone although we did not lead such a life of noise and uproar, yet they had no more regard to me or my officers, either in their private or publick discourse, than if we had not been in the ship. Indeed in the conduct of the ship,

A. D.

1721.

ship, or the guidance of any enterprize, and on all emergencies, for their own sakes, and from a thorough conviction of their own insufficiency, they were entirely governed by me, though when any thing was done they liked, they soon forgot the obligation, and I had also my intervals of disrespect and insolence from them.

What I have now been saying, may serve to give a general idea of the disadvantages I laboured under during the whole series of the remainder of the voyage, in all my undertakings, and I shall now continue my narration of our further proceedings.

January the twenty-fifth, in the morning, we made a sail about two leagues to the leeward of us. We gave her chase till we found she was of the built of Europe, and fearing she might be one of the enemy's ships of war, I clapped on a wind, and in half an hour's time it fell calm. Soon after, we saw a boat rowing towards us, which proved to be the Success's pinnace, commanded by Mr. Davidson, their first lieutenant. My first interview with him, was attended by an astonishment equal on both sides; he could hardly believe that he saw us in so mean and forlorn a condition; and I could scarce believe that

After two years separation meet with captain Clipperton in the Success.



A D. that the Success (if in being) had been all  
1721. this while wandering up and down these seas.

Account of I entertained him with a rehearsal of the  
some remark- constant run of misfortunes which had be-  
able occur-  
rences which fallen us in the long interval, since we were  
happened du- separated near the coast of England, till our  
ring their present meeting that day : And he, on his  
voyage. part, entertained me with several remarkable  
incidents, which had happened to them in  
the course of their voyage. Particularly he  
told me, that about a twelvemonth before,  
they had taken a new French built brigantine,  
and put their officers and ship's company's  
plunder on board of her, which they valued  
at ten thousand pounds sterling ; that their se-  
cond captain, Mr. Mitchel was intrusted with  
the command of her, and was ordered to go  
to some island on the coast of Mexico, and to  
stay there till captain Clipperton should join him  
with his ship ; but that they never could find  
the island since, and therefore judged that  
poor Mitchel, and his men, were either starved,  
or murdered by the Spaniards or Indians, who  
are very dexterous at that kind of work, or  
that he had perished with the island, which  
captain Clipperton and some others were of  
opinion was sunk, since, by all their endea-  
vours they had not been able to find it out a-

gain.

gain. Mr. Davidfon seeing me startled at so improbable a conjecture, continued, that I need not be surprized at it, since such submersions were frequent on those coasts, and began to tell me of a dreadful instance of it on the coast of Peru, which had happened a little before ; for, says he, my captain having a desire to look into the road of Cheripe, when we arrived there, we found the town, and a great point of land which formed the road, entirely under water. But I undeceived him in this, by telling him how lately we had seen that very place. The truth on't is, captain Clipperton, though he was reputed to be well skilled in the navigation of these seas, was always unfortunate at finding out any port he wanted, and lest his continual blunders should be imputed to his ignorance, he always found out some expedient or other to evade any suspicion of his inability. The story of captain Mitchel, who was a very worthy man, and an expert sailor, is, in all its circumstances, a very tragical one. There was always a jealousy between him and his captain, who ordered him to a place, and pretended to give him infallible directions to find it, which never could be found afterwards, and its my opinion, never was above water ;

- A. D. 1721. water ; and the unfortunate gentleman, without doubt, perished in some obscure, miserable manner, in the quest of a place that was never yet, and perhaps never may be discovered. In our discourse, I asked Mr. Davidson, the value of the booty they had made, and he assured me it did not exceed seventy thousand dollars—but that they had lost great opportunities—that in October, one thousand, seven hundred and twenty, they were in the bay of Conception, and had the misfortune to leave three laden ships behind them, and missed a fourth who was coming into the bay, and who was so near as to hail them, talk to them, and was becalmed by them ;—that though it was probable their launch would have taken them all four, yet through their captain's deafness to advice, they took none of them,—that, moreover, they had never yet cleaned their bottom, notwithstanding they had had it in their power to do it ; and that this negligence had like to have cost them dear, for that in their return from Conception they looked into Coquimbo, where they saw five ships at anchor, three of which let slip after them, and overtook them apace, but by the favour of thick weather, and a hard gale of wind, they got clear of them ;  
and

and further, that off the port of Callao, they fell in with the Flying-fish, a frigate, who was cruising for me in the bark, and who, by unpardonable mismanagement on the part of Clipperton, got safe from them, although deeply laden with a valuable cargoe designed for Cadiz. I have been since informed of this, by one of my surgeon's mates, who was taken in the Mercury, and was surgeon of the Flying-fish at that time.

This was the substance of my discourse with Mr. Davidson, when in the mean time, a gale sprung up, which interrupted us, and I bore down to the Success, and went on board of her, I gave captain Clipperton and Mr. Godfrey, the Agent-General, the whole history of my voyage hitherto, and expected that I should have been treated by them as one belonging to the same interest, but found I was mistaken; for they were unwilling to have any thing to do with me, since my ship was lost. However, I conceived that he could not be so inhuman as to deny me the supply of such necessaries as I wanted, and he could conveniently spare. The answer I had to this expectation, was, that I should know more of his mind the next day. Amongst the rest of the discourse I had with him,

I go on board  
the Success.

A: D. him, he told me he was just come from the  
 1720. island of Cocos, that his people were sickly,  
 and at very short allowance. Upon this, I  
 offered my service to pilot him to Mariato,  
 which was not above thirty leagues distant  
 from us, where he might have refreshed his  
 people, and supplied himself with what he  
 would. But this was not accepted, he being  
 resolved to make the best of his way to the  
 Tres Marias, where, he said, there was tur-  
 tle enough to be had; so I left him for that  
 night.

Captain Clip-  
 perton refuses  
 to have any  
 thing to do  
 with me, or to  
 assist me.

The next morning, as I was going on board  
 of him again with some of my officers, he,  
 at once, spread all his canvas, and crouded  
 away from us, who were in the boat. Upon  
 which I returned to our ship again, and made  
 signals of distress, and fired our gun several  
 times, which was not regarded by him, till  
 his very officers and people cried out on his  
 barbarity, and, at last, he brought to. When  
 I had sailed up with him (being exasperated at  
 such inhuman treatment) I sent Mr. Brooks,  
 our first lieutenant, to know the reason of  
 his abrupt departure, and to tell him that we  
 stood in need of several necessaries, which, if  
 he was not inclinable to give, I would pur-  
 chase them of him. Upon these terms he

spared

spared me two of his quarter-deck guns, sixty round shot, some musquet-balls and flints, and a Spanish chart of the coast of Mexico, and part of India and China, a half hour and a half minute glass, a compass, and about three hundred weight of salt; but with all the arguments I could use, I could not prevail on him to spare us the least thing out of his surgeon's chest for the relief of Mr. Coldsea, our master, who had been ready to die of his wounds received in the engagement with the Margarita, for above three months past. We returned for what we had of him, some bales of coarse broad cloth, as much pitch and tar as he would have, some pigs of copper, and I, in my own particular, gave him a large silver ladle for a dozen of spadoes. When this was concluded, I again asked him if I could be of any service to him, and assured him, I had a pretty good ship under foot, though she made but a poor figure, and believed I could hold him way, and that he knew our cargoe was pretty valuable. To all this he answered, that if I had a cargoe of gold, he had no business with me, and that I must take care of myself. Mr. Hendry, the agent, and Mr. Rainer, and Mr. Dodd, lieutenants of marines, seeing but little prospect that we

We make an exchange of some things he wanted, for others we stood in need of, and then part from one another.

A. D. 1721.

Y

should

A. D.

1721.

should ever get home, and being weary of the work that was imposed upon them, desired I would let them go on board the Success, for a passage to England; which I consenting to, they went on board accordingly, and Clipperton left us to shift for ourselves, near the island of Cano.

Having this supply, I was for going to the Southward into the bay of Panama, to try our fortune there, but the majority opposed me through fear, and were for going to the Tres Marias, to salt turtle there, and then stretch over for India. We directed our course thither, but the winds, near the land, continually reigning in the Western board, and the coast of Mexico lying nearest N. W. by W. and S. E. by E. we crept to windward but very slowly, and at so tedious a rate, that we began again to be short of provisions, before we had got the length of Rio Lego, which renewed our design of landing there, which had been laid aside on our supply got at Mariato. But this intention was no sooner resumed than frustrated, for we were blown past it by a Tegoantepeque, for so the Spaniards, on this coast, call a violent gale at North East.

Continuing

Continuing our way along shore, we, a few days after, met with the *Succes*, in quest of Sonfonnate, where they expected to receive the Marquis of Villa Roche's ransom. He had been, for some time, a prisoner on board of them, and his wife was now at Guatimala, a city within thirty leagues of that port. We ranged close under their stern, and asked how captain Clipperton and the rest of the gentlemen did, but it was not thought proper to return any answer; so, without any concern, he steered one way, and we another. After this, calms, and contrary winds, and unaccountable currents, reduced us to a very small allowance, which we were obliged to diminish daily, and should have been in deeper distress than ever, had it not been for the turtle, which we took on the surface of the water. We had a continual look-out for them, and they were easily known, at a great distance, by the number of sea-birds which perched on their backs. Upon sight of these, we used to lay aside the advantages we might have made of the wind, to embrace the offer of prolonging our provisions. Upon the whole, though we lost some of our way, in pursuit of turtle after this manner, it was not the greatest inconvenience that attended us; the

A. D.

1721.

Meet the *Succes* a second time near the port of Sonfonnate on the coast of Mexico.



A. D. dressing it made a great consumption of  
1721. our water, the quantity of which decreased

Reduced to  
great extremi-  
ties for want  
of provisions,  
&c.

Meet the  
Success a third  
time near the  
port of Gua-  
tulco on the  
coast of Mex-  
ico.

upon us very suddenly, by the continual use of it in boiling the turtle with plantain flower. This relapse into a state of famine, threatening us with speedy and certain perdition, if means were not used to avert it, made me propose the plundering of some small town as we coasted along shore. Guatulco was the nearest to us of any that was taken notice of in any of our charts, lying in the latitude of sixteen degrees, forty minutes, North. But the very morning we were steering in for this place, at sun-rising, we saw a sail, a considerable way to leeward of us. We thought it would be better to take this ship than to venture on shore, and therefore we bore down to her, who in the end proved to be the Success. I had forgot to mention the signal which was agreed upon between us at first, in case of our meeting at sea, at other times, which was to clew up the main-top-gallant-sail, and fire a gun to leeward. This signal I made, as soon as I thought we were near enough for Clipperton to perceive it, which he had no sooner done, than he hauled on a wind, and did not so much as lay by a moment for us to come up with him ; so that we

met,

A. D.

1721.

met with a double baulk, both as to our hopes of Guatulco, and the ship; for we were now so far to the leeward of our port, by bearing down to him, that it was needless to beat up so far against the wind for an uncertainty, when we had a gale we might make a pretty good advantage of, and which would at once, if it had continued; have forwarded us on our way, and have brought us into the neighbourhood of some other port, in a day or two.

But the winds we had were but a few hours propitious to us, and were succeeded by perpetual contrary gales, which destroyed all our hopes of a speedy refreshment, and brought us down to a small earthen plate of calavances, a kind of small bean, for twenty-four hours, which not being sufficient to keep us alive, we had recourse to the remainder of our smoked congers, which had, for some months, been neglected, and lain soaking and rotting in the bulge water. They were certainly as disagreeable food as could be tasted.

Under these calamitous circumstances did we meet with the Success a fourth time near the port of Angels, in the latitude of fifteen degrees, fifty minutes, North, and after having

Meet the Success a fourth time near the port of Angels on the coast of Mexico.

- A. D. made the appointed signal, we stood so near  
1721. to one another, that, to use the sea phrase, a  
bisket might have been tossed from ship to  
ship, but we did not change a word with  
each other ; for captain Clipperton, as I have  
since been informed, had ordered all his offi-  
cers and ship's company to take no notice of  
us. This, I presume, was the greatest indi-  
cation of an inhuman disposition in our re-  
lentless countryman, and former consort, who  
could unconcernedly see us wandering up and  
down an inhospitable coast, in want of every  
thing necessary to keep the sea with, and under  
too well grounded apprehensions that we  
should never be able to take any thing that  
might be of any advantage to us in any res-  
pect, or ever be able to get safe over the vast  
ocean we had to cross in going to India, in a  
ship not at all fitted for the purpose, and fit-  
ter now for a dock, than to be at sea a day  
longer. Nor was the faultiness of our ship  
all, we had also our provisions to seek, and  
where to find any, none of us could tell;  
for all the coast we had seen, was so wild  
and open to the sea, that it would have been  
impossible for us to have landed; which, in-  
deed, considering how our force was dimi-  
nished, nothing could have urged us to, on  
this

A. D.

1721.

this savage coast, but such an extremity as we were plunged into at this time. And so truly sensible was Clipperton of the difficulties and hazards we had to cope with, if our design was to go for India, that he said, The child that was born the day before, would be grey headed with age, before we should arrive there; intimating by that expression, that it was impossible for us to do it. Notwithstanding which, he, without any remorse, could see us on the brink of suffering the greatest severities our ill fortune could load us with, and not lend us a helping hand to deliver us from the impending ruin. He could foresee no means by which we might avoid a lingering death at sea, or throwing ourselves upon the mercy of the barbarous Indians, or Creolian Spaniards, who are little better here, and who, if we had escaped the fury of the surf on the strand, might have put a miserable end to our lives, they having been rarely known to give any quarter; and all this without being touched with it.

Thus surrounded on all sides, by threats of approaching disasters, and some melancholy catastrophe, we, on the twelfth of March, being at that time, off the port of Acapulco, towards the evening, saw a ship between us and the shore. I bore

- A. D. 1721. down to her, till perceiving her to be a large Europe built ship, she appeared much the larger, by reason of a small mist on the surface of the water, with Spanish colours flying, I concluded she was the *Peregrine*, who, as I had been informed, had carried the Prince of St. Bueno, who had been vice-roy of Peru, to this port, in his way to Spain. With these suspicions, being as yet unwilling to run ourselves so immediately into the enemy's clutches, I hauled again on a wind, which he seeing, he pulled down his Spanish, and hoisted an English ensign, and made the signal agreed on between Clipperton and me for knowing one another, and besides made his old signal to speak with me, as fixed amongst other signals between us, before we came out of England. Notwithstanding which I should hardly have trusted him, had we not been so near Acapulco, where I thought Clipperton might have come to a resolution of cruising for the Manila ship, and wait for her coming out of that harbour, and thinking himself too weak, was now willing to reinforce himself by what strength I could assist him with. Had it been in any other part, I should have been so far from entertaining any thoughts of such a change in him that I should have looked

A. D.

1721.

looked on all his signals as the artifice of the enemy, who might have acquainted themselves with them by the information of such of our men as they might have taken prisoners. But now making no doubt that it was he, I bore down to him, and being come along his side, he sent captain Cook, his second lieutenant, in his yawl, with an obliging letter to me, to inform me, he was cruising for the homeward bound Manila ship, and desiring I would assist him in the enterprize, and come on board of him the next morning to consult on the properest methods of attacking her, and proposing a union of our two ships companies. I was very well pleased with this offer, and, without hesitation, returned him word, that I would be with him early.

In the mean time I read over his letter publickly to my people, and exhorted them seriously to consider of the great benefits that would accrue to us on all sides from it. Upon which they all expressed the most resign'd willingness to join in the undertaking. But as Clipperton had used us so unhandsofly before, they desired I would get some security for their shares, signed by captain Clipperton, Mr. Godfrey, the agent, and the rest

A. D.  
1721.

rest of their officers. I went on board according to appointment with Mr. Brooks and Randall my lieutenants, and was received with a seeming unreserved civility, and all animosities being as it were lost in oblivion, nothing now appeared among us but perfect harmony. I first told captain Clipperton and Mr. Godfrey, that my officers and people, expected such a paper from under their hands as should entitle them to such shares as were allowed them by the owners articles; to which they answered, that it was but reasonable they should be satisfied in that, and immediately drew up an instrument, fully worded for the purpose, and signed it. This was all my people wanted to make them easy.

We then proceeded upon our main business, and after mature deliberation, it was thought most advisable that I should send the greatest part of my men on board the Success, as soon as we saw the Manila ship come out of Acapulco, and leave only a boat's crew with me to bring me away, in case I should have occasion to make use of my ship as a fire-ship, or a smoker, which we proposed to do, if we found the enemy too hard for us; and it was determined to board her at once, as we should otherwise

have

have had much the worst of it on account of their superior weight of metal, and the better capacity of their ships, which are built very strong, to bear a cannonading. Clipperton assured me, he was certain of the time when she would sail from this port, which the Spaniards say is always within a day or two after Passion week, of which we had a fortnight yet to come.

I proposed, if we should have the misfortune of failing to meet with her on this coast, as we might easily miss her if she should come out in the night, that we should go directly to Guam, one of the Ladron islands, where she always stopt for refreshments; but this being a point we should have time enough to consider of, before the time of our cruise was elapsed, it was left undetermined, and referred to another meeting. However we now projected such a scheme, that if we had but met with her, and vigorously prosecuted what we designed, I think she could not have got clear of us, without being scorched at least, for my ship was very fit for a fire-ship, and the Success could have fought twenty-four guns on a side.

But



A. D.  
1721.

*of Leighman*

Before I returned to my own ship, I acquainted captain Clipperton with our slender stock of provisions, but particularly with our shortness of water; and he told me he had eighty tons of it on board, and he would spare me as much of it as I would have, or any thing else his ship afforded. I had now the pleasure of being restored to my command in as regular a manner as ever, every one, from the highest to the lowest, expressing the satisfaction he had in the prospect before us. But Morpew, that ringleader of all our disorders, fearing my resentment might fall heavily upon him, was contriving how to screen himself from me, and after all, thought it was his best way to insinuate himself into the favour of the captain and officers of the Success, which he did effectually by an humble submissive outward deportment, and prevailing presents. In short, he had his end, and left me to go on board there on March the fourteenth in the evening, and the next afternoon Mr. Rainor who acted with us afterwards as captain of Marines, came on board of us to visit his old shipmates, and to stay with us all night. I constantly kept reminding Clipperton of our want of water, and he as often promised to supply us with a large quantity at once.

Thus

Thus we cruised in good order, and with a great deal of hope, until March the seventeenth, the time appointed for me to suffer the most cruel and perfidious piece of treachery that could well be. But in order to give my reader an exact account of the circumstances of it, I must inform him, that we used to cruise off and on the shore, at such a convenient distance as not to be discovered from the land; at the same time that it was next to impossible for any ship or ships to stir out of the harbour of Acapulco, without our seeing them; and we not failing so well as the Success, it was Clipperton's custom to shorten sail for us, particularly in the night, and shew us lights, on all necessary occasions, that we might know how to follow him. But towards this evening he stretched a-head of us about two leagues, while I could not perceive that he lowered so much as a top-gallant-sail for us to come up with him. I could not but be a little startled at this, as being quite contrary to his usual method. However, I kept standing after him as I thought, in the night, till we were almost in the breakers on the shore, which of course obliged us to tack and stand out to sea again, admiring all the time, that we had had no

signal

Thus

A. D.  
1721.

signal for going about. The next morning we had no sight of any ship near us, which laid me under the most terrible apprehensions, considering the sad condition we were in for want of water, and the vast distance we were at from any place where we could expect to get a recruit of any, having now no choice left, but either to beat up two hundred and twenty leagues against the wind, to go to the Tres Marias, or bear away a much more considerable distance, for the gulph of Amapala, in the latitude of twelve degrees, twenty minutes North, on this coast, or the island of Cocos, in the latitude of five degrees North.

But notwithstanding our distress, I kept our cruising station for him two or three days, not doubting but that it was the fault of my people on the watch, who neglected to keep a good look-out. At last, they resumed the authority that Morpew, and their other friends had vested them with, and would be persuaded to nothing but to bear away to the first convenient place to water at, and in truth it was time, for we were now forty odd men, who had but three butts of water for a run of three hundred leagues and upwards, on a coast

coast subject to long calms, variable winds, and uncertain currents.

But before I go farther, it will be necessary to set this cruel and dishonourable behaviour of Clipperton's in a true light, by the information I had from the mouths of his chief officers, after my arrival in China. It was, that the night they left us, he assembled all his officers together, and told them it was his intention to leave the cruise immediately, and go off the coast. His officers upon this, remonstrated to him the barbarity of such an action, and told him, that if he really proposed to leave off all thoughts of the Manila ship, yet, since I had been so ready to assist him, and that we were now friends, he could do no less than defer his design till the next evening, and, in the mean time, take an opportunity of sparing us some water. But he put off their serious expostulations with an inhuman sneer, saying, That if I should, through want, be obliged to surrender, I should only undergo the same fate, that, perhaps, some others had before me. In short, he ordered all the lights in his ship to be kept close, and tacked directly from the shore, and took his departure from the last land we saw the foregoing evening, leaving

- A. D. 1721. leaving us to stand in for the land and cruise by ourselves, though every moment expecting signals from the Success, who was soon far enough out of the reach of our sight, even if it had been day-light.

Thus this man, perhaps, through an excess of mean-spiritedness, and dreading the engagement with a ship who was always known to defend itself with some obstinacy, neglected as fine an opportunity as most of our nation have ever had of taking this ship, who, as I was informed by some Spaniards from Manila, when I was in China, came out of Acapulco about a week after we left the cruise. She was called the Santo Christo, mounted forty odd brass guns, and was extremely rich. How great a prospect we had, how great an opportunity we lost, of taking this, which is always the richest trading ship that goes to sea, I leave the world to judge, when I assure them it was hardly possible for us to have missed her, at one of the ports I have mentioned, and as we were prepared, the action would not have been very extraordinary one if we had subdued her.

Thus was I as I at first thought, rescued from the constant anxiety of mind I had laboured under since the loss of my ship, and  
lifted

lifted up to the highest pitch of satisfaction, in the good fortune I had of being joined to my consort in so noble and advantageous a design, after so long a separation, only to be plunged the deeper into a gulph of despair. My people happened to guess right in this affair, being convinced of the strictness of their look-out, and blamed my easy belief in a man who had, just before, so openly and maliciously expressed his mind to me. What made our case the worse was, that we depending upon promised supplies of what we wanted, had lived at a larger allowance than ordinary, which now we had reason to repent, because it had reduced us lower than ever; whereas if I had not cruised with Clipperton, we might have spun out what we had, by good husbandry, to have lasted us much longer. But nothing now remained, but to apply all our thoughts on returning back again, let the event be what it would; and having reduced ourselves to a very small allowance of water, we turned our head to the South-eastward.

A. D.

1721.



## S E C T. XII.

*Arrival in the road of Sonfonnate, in the latitude of thirteen degrees, North, on the coast of Mexico, where we take a Spanish ship called the Sacra Familia.*

WE had very favourable gales, in-  
 much that on March the thirtieth,  
 in the evening, we saw the road of  
 Sonfonnate, and as the sun set, we saw a ship  
 at anchor there. It being a moon-light night,  
 I sent the first lieutenant, with some of the  
 best hands, in our yawl, to discover what this  
 ship might be, and to try what he could do  
 with her. My boat had not been gone above  
 two hours, before I heard two guns fired,  
 and soon after that, she returned, and informed  
 me, the ship was a large one, of one tier of  
 guns at least.

I nevertheless continued to ply in all the  
 night, and prepared for action. At day-light

we

A. D.

1721.

we found she did not make so formidable a figure as we expected she would. At sun-rising the land-breeze blew so fresh off from the shore, we worked but slowly up with her, and in the mean time we received all her fire upon every board we made. We made no return to all this, though their boat was busily employed to bring soldiers from the shore to this ship. They had hoisted a jar of powder, containing about ten gallons, with lighted match, at each main and fore-yard arm, and at the bowsprit end, with design to let them fall on our decks if we boarded them. This contrivance, if it had taken effect, would have soon made an end of both our ships, and of all that were in them. Seeing them so desperate in their preparations, I could do no less than expect a warm dispute with them, and by what I could see, they were, in all points, superior by much to us in strength: but as our case would not admit of the neglect of what might be done to mend it, though at ever so hazardous a rate, their more than ordinary contrivances for defence, did not much dismay us.

At eleven in the morning, and after having received all their fire since day-light, without the least return, the sea-breeze came in, and



A D. that I might make our small force the most  
1721. beneficial to us that might be, I ordered our three guns to be brought over on the side we were like to engage with them, and being within musquet-shot, we discharged them. The sea-breeze freshening, ran us upon them very fast, whilst our small arms were briskly and effectually employed to break their powder jars, before we came to board them, which we did without delay, and after the exchange of a few shot, when on board of each other, they submitted.

This ship was called the *Sacra Familia*, of three hundred tons, six guns, and seventy men; besides a great number of small arms, with some grenade shells and shot. She had been, for some time before, arrived from Callao, with wine and brandy; but had now nothing in her but fifty jars of gunpowder, and a small parcel of rusk and jerked beef. In short, she could hardly be said to be worth the trouble we took, and the risques we ran for her; but she had the reputation of being a better sailer, and was visibly better fitted than our own, wherefore I changed ships, and we all went on board of our prize, who was equipped in the warlike manner we found her, and commissioned on purpose to take us, if  
the

she should chance to meet with us in her way. Our small arms, to do justice to my people, were handled with the greatest dexterity ; but being mostly employed in shattering the powder jars, that the combustible matter in them might fall into the water, there was none killed on board of her, but the Contre-master, and only one slightly wounded ; but if our small arms had not been so usefully diverted, there must have been more slaughter amongst them ; on our part, we did not receive the least damage.

A merchant we had taken upon this occasion, seemed inclinable to purchase the *Jesus Maria*, which we had quitted, and when he heard that her cargoe consisted of pitch, tar, and copper, he approved of my demand, and went on shore to raise the sum. We were now so bare of provisions, that we could not afford to keep any prisoners in possession, and therefore turned all the Whites and Indians on shore, and kept only the Negroes on board. And that we might lose as little time as possible, we went immediately to work, to overhaul our rigging and sails, that we might get our new ship ready for the sea, without loss of time. But I was interrupted in this, by a letter from the governour of the place,

A. D.

1721.

which was brought to me in the evening. We could none of us understand it, for our chief and only interpreter of the Spanish language staid behind us on Juan Fernandes, but by the messenger that brought it, we found that it was some account of a truce on foot between the crowns of Great-Britain and Spain, and that the governour requested me to stay five days, that he might thoroughly satisfy me in it, by shewing me the articles of accommodation. I thought this somewhat strange, and told the Spanish gentleman, it was not a peaceable or friendly reception I had met withal, and asked him how they came to arm themselves in so desperate a manner as they did, and why the governour did not rather chuse to send me a flag of truce before we engaged ; and the rather, as he had had the whole morning beforehand to think of it in. I asked moreover, why these articles were not on board the ship we had taken, she coming from Lima, from whence they said they had received these papers, and continued to tell him, that it was very strange to me, that none of the officers we had taken prisoners, should know any thing of this matter ; but that, notwithstanding all this, I had such a regard for the name of Peace, that I would

would stay fifteen days to be made sure of it, if the governor would supply us with water and provisions; but that if he did not, I could not pretend to make a stay of above twenty-four hours here, and therefore I sent him the following letter.

March the 31st.

Honourable Sir,

1721.

I Could not fully understand your letter, for want of a sufficient interpreter of the Spanish language; but from a farther consideration, and the best interpretation I can get of it, I understand there is a treaty of Peace between their *Britannick* and *Catholick Majesties*, whom God preserve. I should be glad to see the proclamation and articles, and promise with faith and honour most religiously to observe them as a *British* subject, not doubting but you will do the same, and therefore desire you would supply me and my ship's company with some small refreshments, being now, as you say, no longer enemies but friends. I am, with the greatest respect, SIR,

*Yours, &c.*

GEORGE SHELVOCKE, *sen.*

Z 4

This

A. D.

1721.

This being delivered to the governour, he consented to the request I made in it, and our boat went on shore every morning with a flag of truce. The first four days we were supplied with eight small jars of water, and on the fifth, we were reduced to five, and during the whole time, we had but one small cow, which was attended by a large boatful of men. Amongst them were two priests, who with great familiarity, and shew of friendship, brought with them a paper in Spanish, which they called the Articles of Peace, which they knew very well we could not understand; besides that it was so wretchedly written and blotted, that had it been English, we should have been puzzled to read it. I therefore desired the priests to translate it fairly into Latin, which they promised to do, as soon as they came on shore. They took the papers back with them, and, for my farther satisfaction, told me, the governour would send for some Englishmen who lived at the city of Guatimala, if I would but continue in the road three days longer, to which I, in a word, answered, he might take his own time.

Two days after this, when my boat went on shore as usual, the governour ordered

my

my people to be taken prisoners as soon as they landed. I was all the day in suspense, and not able to guess what it could be that detained them so long on shore, but was far from imagining the governour would or could have made such a breach in the laws of nations, and the security of a flag of truce, as to violate the protection of it, which even some of the most barbarous nations esteem sacred. But in the evening I was astonished to see only two of my boat's crew, in a small leaky canoe, with two letters, the one from the governour, and the other from Mr. Brooks, my first lieutenant. The governour in his, required me to deliver up the *Sacra Familia*, and surrender myself, and that otherwise he would declare us pyrates; and Mr. Brooks in his, told me, that all he could learn since he had been a prisoner was, that the governour was endeavouring to bully me. The governour in his letter, proposed two ways of conveying us out of the Spanish dominions, the one to *la Vera Cruz*, by land, or to *Lima*, in Peru, by sea. These offers I equally disliked; for I did not like a journey of thirteen hundred miles at least, through such a country of barbarous people; nor yet a voyage to *Lima* under their conduct. My two

men

A. D.

1721.

men who brought these letters, told me, that Frederick Mackenzey, one of the boat's crew, had let the governour into the secret of our distresses, and of my former design to get water at the island of Tygers in the gulph of Amapala, which, he said he would take care to prevent, if we dared be so hardy as to attempt it. He seems to have believed he had us now safe enough, knowing we had no other boat now, but a very small canoe, which he thought would be unsafe to send from the ship in that gulph, where the inhabitants were all warlike Indians.

Notwithstanding the ungenerous and unlawful treatment we had met with, and though I saw there was no relying upon the honour of these people, I was willing to come to a farther treaty. I could not foresee but that our shortness of provisions, of all kinds, would oblige us to submit, whether peace or war, yet was resolved to do it in a handsom manner, or suffer to the last extremity. The difficulty was how to communicate my mind to the governour, since it would have been an unreasonable request in me, to have desired any of my men to carry a message to a place where certain captivity attended them. But the two who brought the letters off, liked the shore

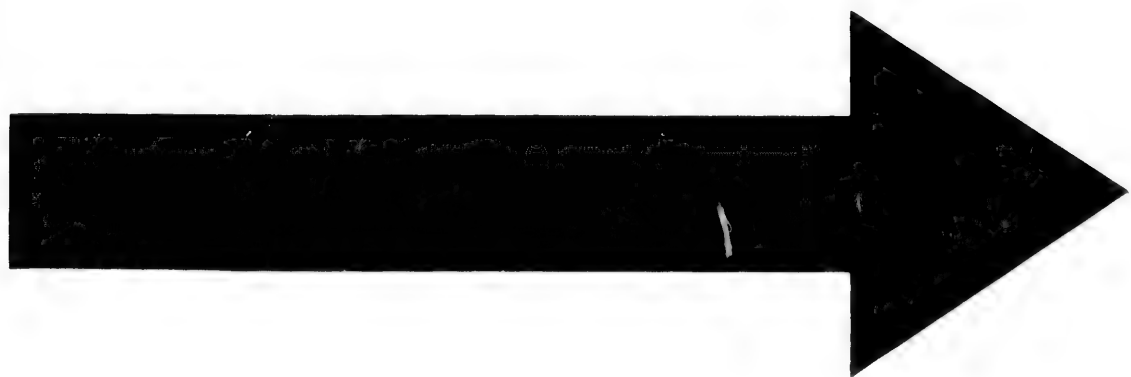
shore so well, that they voluntarily offered their service, and a third went to throw the water out of the canoe. I sent the following letter by them, in French.

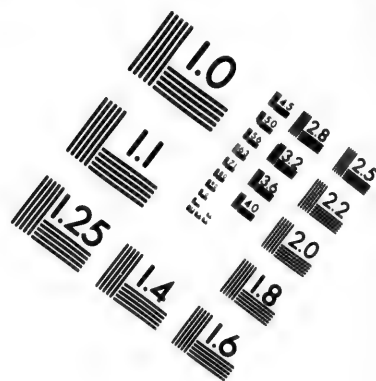
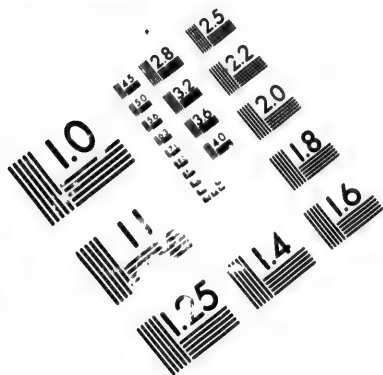
Honourable Sir,

‘ **Y**OU know very well that I have lain  
‘ here some time for a right interpre-  
‘ tation of your papers, and, consequently,  
‘ did not refuse any thing contained in them.  
‘ I think you treat us worse than enemies,  
‘ when you detain my boat under a flag of  
‘ truce. I never will act any thing contrary  
‘ to the orders of my Sovereign Lord, his  
‘ Britannick Majesty ; but withal must con-  
‘ sult the credit of my country, and my own  
‘ safety. If I can be assured of a safe and  
‘ sure conduct for ourselves and effects to Pa-  
‘ nama, and from thence by the way of Porto  
‘ Bel, to some of the British plantations, we  
‘ will come to a farther treaty ; which if you  
‘ intend, you must signify to night, by firing  
‘ two guns, and by sending my boat and peo-  
‘ ple, and the usual supply, otherwise ne-  
‘ cessity will oblige me to sail to night.

‘ If we treat no farther, I leave the Jesus  
‘ Maria in the possession of the captain of  
‘ the







# IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



- A. D. 1721. ‘ the Sacra Familia, until we make a farther  
 ‘ account of this ship, which we will do, by  
 ‘ the first opportunity.

I am, &c.

GEORGE SHELVOCKE, *sen.*

I could not imagine the governour would have neglected this offer. But I received no manner of answer to this, and therefore I weighed anchor before day the next morning, and lay too, in the bay, till ten of the clock, expecting to hear from the shore every moment; but nothing appearing, I made sail, leaving behind me the Jesus Maria, a much more valuable ship, in herself, than the other. The actions of this gentleman, sufficiently convinced me, there could be no peace, or likely accommodation. However, I instantly ordered the following formal protest to be drawn up against him.

*The*

*The Protest against Don Manuel de Medino Solerzaro, Governour of Sonsonate, or la Trinidad, in the latitude of thirteen degrees North, on the Western coast of the kingdom of Mexico.*

‘ **M**EMORANDUM, That on the thirty-first of March, one thousand, seven hundred and twenty-one, in the morning, as we, the Captain, Officers, and Ship’s Company of the ship called by the Spaniards, the Jesus Maria, and by us, the Happy Return, were standing into Sonsonate road, in the latitude of thirteen degrees, North, on the coast of Mexico, we spied a ship lying at anchor there, who cannonaded us some time before we made any return, and made all preparations to receive us as an enemy, being supplied with a number of men from the shore, and having powder jars hanging at each yard-arm; but after an engagement of about an hour’s time, we carried her by boarding, at eleven of the clock in the forenoon. The Escrivan of the said ship being on board, desired we would sell him the Jesus Maria, which we agreed to, and  
‘ sent

A. D. 1721. ' sent him on shore to raise the money for  
' that purpose, and at night he came off with  
' another Spanish gentleman, and brought us  
' a letter of advice from the governour on  
' shore, signifying that there was a treaty of  
' peace on foot between their Britannick and  
' Catholick Majesties, which was what we  
' never before heard of. However, the cap-  
' tain sent to the governour on shore, signi-  
' fying that he should be very glad to see the  
' Proclamation and Articles; and that there-  
' upon, he should be ready to obey the com-  
' mands of his Sovereign Lord King GEORGE,  
' to the utmost of his power; so we came  
' to an agreement with the governour to lye  
' in the road until he sent to Guatimala, a  
' place fifty leagues distant from this, for  
' these papers, provided he would supply us  
' with water and provisions; and on the fifth  
' of April in the afternoon, the governour  
' sent on board two papers, which, by the  
' best interpretation we could get of them,  
' did not appear to us after the form of Pro-  
' clamations. We told them who brought  
' these papers aboard, that we were in great  
' want of an interpreter; upon which they  
' told us, there were some Englishmen at  
' Guatimala, whom they would send for, if  
    ' we

‘ we would stay three days for them, and  
‘ that they would supply us with water and  
‘ provisions till that time, which we agreed  
‘ to, and they desired we would send our  
‘ boat on shore every morning for the supply ;  
‘ accordingly on the seventh of April, one  
‘ thousand, seven hundred and twenty-one,  
‘ we sent our boat on shore with Mr. Brooks,  
‘ our first lieutenant, and five men, which  
‘ officer, men and boat the governor detained  
‘ under a Flag of Truce, being one day be-  
‘ fore the time was expired, wherein they  
‘ determined to bring the Englishmen from  
‘ Guatimala, and, at night, he sent off a small  
‘ boat, with two of our men, with a letter  
‘ from himself, and another from Mr. Brooks  
‘ to the captain ; his letter signified, that if  
‘ we did not deliver up our ship to him, he  
‘ would declare us pyrates. And Mr. Brooks,  
‘ by his, informed him, that it was his opi-  
‘ nion, that the governour was endeavouring  
‘ to bully him into a surrender, having spoken  
‘ very ambiguously of a Cessation of Arms.  
‘ Notwithstanding which, the captain sent the  
‘ governor a letter, signifying, that if we  
‘ could be secured of a safe and sure con-  
‘ duct for ourselves and effects to Pana-  
‘ ma, and from thence, by the way of  
‘ Porto

A. D.

1721.

‘ Porto Bello, be conveyed to any of our  
 ‘ British plantations, we would come to a  
 ‘ farther treaty ; which, if he intended, he  
 ‘ was desired to signify it by firing two guns  
 ‘ as soon as he had received this advice, and  
 ‘ send us the usual supply, if not, we should  
 ‘ be obliged by necessity to sail. At three in  
 ‘ the morning (the governour having shewn  
 ‘ no signal, nor sent any word) we weighed  
 ‘ our anchor, and laid to in the bay till ten,  
 ‘ and made sail, being forced thereto for want  
 ‘ of water, not having for above five days at  
 ‘ most aboard ; which, if we made any lon-  
 ‘ ger delay, would have reduced us to sur-  
 ‘ render up ourselves at discretion. For these  
 ‘ considerations we, the underwritten, do pro-  
 ‘ test against the proceedings of the said Go-  
 ‘ vernour of Sonsonnate, for all damages  
 ‘ that may arise by carrying this ship out of  
 ‘ the said port ; having no other intent, in  
 ‘ case of the certainty of a peace, than to  
 ‘ deliver her up at the first convenient port,  
 ‘ as was signified to the governour by letter ;  
 ‘ in witness whereof, we have hereunto set  
 ‘ our hands, on board the *Sacra Familia*, ly-  
 ‘ ing in the road of Sonsonnate, on the fe-  
 ‘ venth day of April, in the eighth year of  
 ‘ the reign of our Sovereign Lord GEORGE  
 of



of our  
ne to a  
ded, he  
two guns  
ice, and  
e should  
three in  
g shewn  
weighed  
y till ten,  
for want  
re days at  
any lon-  
as to sur-  
For these  
a, do pro-  
said Go-  
damages  
hip out of  
intent, in  
than to  
ient port,  
by letter;  
reunto fet  
milia, ly-  
n the fe-  
th year of  
GEORGE

A. D.

1721.

George Shelvocke, *Captain.*  
Samuel Randall,  
John Rainor,  
Blowfield Coldsea,  
Nicho. Adams,  
Pierre le Maistre,  
George Shelvocke, *jun.*  
Matthew Stewart,  
George Hinfall,  
John Doidge,  
James Daniel,  
William Morgan,  
David Griffin,  
John Pearson,  
Christopher Hawkins,  
William Clement,  
James Moulville,  
John Giles,  
James Moyet,  
John Popplestone,  
John Theobald,  
George Chappell,  
Richard Crofts.

A. D.

1721.

*Description of the road of Sonsonnate.*

**B**Efore I proceed from hence, I must take notice, that this road is formed by a long point of land, running out into the sea, called Point Remedios. You must give this point a good berth. It diminishes, in height, as it advances into the sea, and off it are two or three very high rocks. When you are at the anchoring place, which is uncertain, all that side of the bay being equally safe, you will see very little appearance of any town or fortification; and indeed there is no great need of the latter, for the surf is constantly so violent, that it would be almost impossible to make a regular descent here. A little to the Westward of the town, is the opening of a small river, called the river of Sonsonnate, and close to the Westward of the entrance of that, is a mountain called the Volcano of Sonsonnate, though I believe it never burns now. But the most remarkable signs to know this place by, are the high lands of Paneca, seemingly contiguous to the volcano. They appear like a cluster of six or seven peaks, of the same height and bigness, belonging to one mountain, and seem to be all in a row. This is the seaport of Guatemala, and some other considerable towns situated up in the country.

*Voyage*

*Voyage continued in the Sacra Familia, or  
Holy Family.*

1721.

Having now got out to sea, we reduced ourselves to a pint of water for twenty-four hours, and directed our course for the gulph of Amapala, which was about thirty-five leagues to the E. S. E. of this place, in order to get water there, on the island of Tygers. The loss of my officer and boat's crew, sensibly diminished the number of white faces amongst us, and we should have been so much weakened by it, that we should never have been able to manage this great ship, with her large heavy cotton sails, if we had not taken with us our negroe prisoners, who proved to be very good sailors. The loss of our boat was also a very great inconveniency to us; but as I only thought of taking water enough to carry us to Panama, where we were fully resolved to surrender, if it was really Peace, I imagined we might make shift with her, and get such a quantity as we might want, in two or three days time.

The winds were favourable, and we arrived there on the tenth following in the evening. As soon as we had entered the gulph we found ourselves in the midst of several small islands,

Direct our  
course for the  
gulph of A-  
mapala.  
  
Arrival in  
the gulph of  
Amapala.

A. D. and amongst the rest, the island of Tygers,  
1721. where we expected a supply of water; but

After a fruit-  
less search a-  
mongst the  
greenest i-  
lands in that  
gulph, could  
find no fresh  
water.

our expectations proved vain, for after a ha-  
zardous and fruitless search for water, not only  
on that, but on some of the greenest of the o-  
ther isles, there was not the least drop of fresh  
water to be found, by us, on any of them.

Under this misfortune we could not, at first,  
so much as think of venturing to sea, so slen-  
derly provided with the most necessary article  
to keep us alive in so hot a climate; nor yet  
of throwing ourselves into the power of the  
savages inhabiting the borders of this gulph.  
As to returning back again to Sonsonnate,  
which was thirty-five leagues to windward  
of us, we might be a month or more, in  
gaining so much on this coast, and perish in  
the attempt; and though Rio Lego was to  
the leeward of us, yet there were material  
objections to be made against surrendering  
there; for all who have attempted to describe  
it, and to give instructions for going into that  
port, agree that it is very dangerous and un-  
safe to attempt it with a large ship, without  
a pilot, or being well acquainted with the  
place itself.

As people in so forlorn a way, are apt to  
form innumerable apprehensions as to the ill  
event

event of any thing they fix upon, we presently concluded, and not without reason, that before we could reach Rio Lego, we should be so weak, for want of sustenance, that we should not have it in our power to manage our ship with so much dexterity as to avoid any dangers we might inadvertently meet with. This together with our entire ignorance of that harbour, made me fear for any accident, with the ship, in going in there, which might have been imputed to us as a malicious and wilful destruction of her, the consequences of which might have been very serious to us. Right or wrong we must have submitted to such constructions as they would have put upon such an accident; and these parts of this continent are so little known to the Europeans, that the inhabitants here, may gratify their spirit of revenge in what degree they please, and keep it a secret among themselves.

In vain should we have pleaded our surrender on the hearing of a cessation of arms; for their universal jealousy and haughty contempt of strangers, would have been enough to drive them on to pay themselves, for the hurt we had done their trade for these two years past, with the lives of those who

A. D. might have it in their power, to do them still  
 1721. greater hurt, upon occasions to come. I had  
 all these considerations in my head, when I  
 was treating with the governour of Sonson-  
 nate, especially after he had disregarded our  
 flag of truce. I considered with myself that  
 it would not be difficult for a man, who could  
 dispense with such a formality, to lay a plot  
 to cut us off, in so long a journey as we should  
 have had, in crossing this continent from sea  
 to sea, by ambuscades of Indians, and then  
 report it to have been done without his know-  
 ledge. 'Twas these considerations that made  
 me chuse to go to Panama, since we could  
 think of nothing but surrendering, whether  
 peace or war, that being, in a manner, in  
 the neighbourhood of the English, and, if it  
 was really peace, the constant residence of  
 some or other of our countrymen. At the  
 worst, we could not be so openly exposed  
 there, to the inhuman artifices of the Spani-  
 ards, who stick at nothing they can privately  
 do, to keep foreigners in a dark ignorance of  
 these great and rich kingdoms.

Leave the  
 gulph of A-  
 mapala.

Surrounded on all sides by these unhappy  
 circumstances, and brought down to the most  
 miserable condition imaginable, threatened on  
 all sides with inevitable destruction, unfit for  
 the

the sea, fearful of trusting ourselves in the cruel hands of the inhabitants on the shore, quite dispirited by the continued course of misfortunes, which had hitherto been our constant attendants ; but, above all, lamenting this unhappy baulk in not finding water, where we so much expected it, which had reduced us to such extremities as we had never known before; in short, ready to sink under the burden of our calamities, we weighed our anchor on the thirteenth of April before day-break, and stood out from this gulph. And now having the open sea before us, I brought my people in general, to an obstinate resolution not, by any means, to surrender, on this part of the coast, let the consequences be ever so miserable. Upon this unanimous agreement, with not forty gallons of water in the ship, and no other liquids to supply the want of it, we came to so small an allowance as half a pint of water for twenty-four hours, and even this allowance was rather too large, considering there was no place, we knew of, where we could get any more, nearer than the island of Quibo, which was about two hundred leagues distant from us. We were forty-three in number, reckoning our negroes. Thus resolved, we shaped our course for

In great distress for want of water

A. D.

1721.

Quibo, but having very uncertain winds and weather, we were thirteen days at this allowance. During this interval of time, there is none who has not experienced it, can conceive what we suffered in a sultry clime, by the perpetual extremity of thirst, which would not permit us to eat an ounce of victuals in a day. We constantly drank our urine, which, though it moistened our mouths for a time, excited our thirst the more. Some of us attempted to drink large draughts of the sea water, which had like to have been fatal. An universal fever, and languid decay of spirits now reigned amongst us, and there was not one of us, at this time, that was not fitter to be carried to a sick bed, than to be obliged to labour at the hard work, which is requisite to manage a large ship, in a place subject to sudden and violent squalls and gusts of wind, while, at the hazard of losing our masts or canvas, we were forced to croud along, with all our sail, to reach the place, where we hoped to be rescued from a lingering death.

Unexpectedly relieved  
at the island  
of Cano.

At length we were unexpectedly assisted; for on April the twenty-fifth, towards the evening, we came up with the island of Cano, in the latitude of nine degrees North, which



which, by the verdure of its appearance, promised to yield us water, if we could but get our canoe on shore there. Under hopes of succour from this little isle, we came to an anchor on the North-west side of it; but it was as much as we could do to hand our sails, stop the cable, and the like. We soon began to imagine we could see a run of water; but, at the same time, dreaded the dangerous surf, which broke on the beach, all around those parts we had seen of it. Mr. Randall was sent to see what could be done for us: but he, and the people with him, not returning till it was very late at night, I was fearful they were lost, or that not finding water there, they were gone to the continent, which was about three leagues from us, in quest of it. At length, to my unspeakable satisfaction, they came on board with their jars filled. Great was the joy, among us, to be relieved, and rescued, as it were, from the hands of death; but as they did not bring off to us above sixty or seventy gallons, I took care to restrain our people in the use of it, allowing, to each man, only a quart, to be immediately distributed to each. What made me the more strict in this was, Mr. Randall assured me, the breakers were so dangerous that

A. D. 1721. that he believed we should not be able to get at any more. That very night we chanced to have a heavy shower of rain, which we made the best use of, by catching what we could of it in sheets, blankets, and what else we could get for the purpose. During this long interval of thirst, we constantly wished for rainy weather, and had often good reason to expect it, by the appearance of lowring black clouds, which seemed every minute to be ready to discharge their burdens upon us, yet we had never had any rain before, to any purpose, which tantalized us in a wretched manner.

Being willing to make another trial, the next day, I sent the boatswain, and some with him, to make a second attempt; but, after having been quite round the island, and wasted the whole day, in search of a smooth beach, to land upon, he could not see one spot where he durst venture on shore. Therefore, thinking we had a stock sufficient to carry us to Quibo, which was about thirty leagues from us, I weighed the next day, and in ranging near the island, I saw a smooth beach, which induced me to send the canoe a third time, on shore, that we might be provided against such  
contrary

contrary winds, currents, or calms, as we might meet with in our way. Accordingly they went, and filled nine jars, which done, we held our way to the South-eastward, and, in a few days, arrived at Quibo, and anchored at the same place, where we had been twice before.



S E C T.

A. D.

1721.



## S E C T. XIII.

*Third Arrival at the island of Quibo,  
in the latitude of seven degrees, thirty  
minutes North, on the Western  
coast of Mexico.*

 EING here, we pursued the main business which had brought us again to this place. We were not, however, in a great deal of haste. It was requisite, since we were now within less than eighty leagues of Panama, where we proposed to surrender, to think of it a little before hand, and contrive proper methods by which to carry on our treaty. We had this certain advantage with us, that as Panama is a place of little or no strength towards the sea, and but little frequented by their ships of war, we could treat with them at a distance, and be truly informed how affairs stood in Europe; especially if there should be any of the South Sea company's officers there, who would

would, no doubt, be ready to assist us with their advice. During our considerations on on this point, which was likely to put an end to what had as yet been an unfortunate expedition, we wooded and watered at leisure. Some searched the woods for fruits, to refresh us, after having been so long confined to the grossest eating, by way of prevention against the scurvy, which we had been, all along, less subject to, than any ship I ever saw or heard of, in such long runs. Those who, as we thought, were thus usefully employed, brought us Papas, Guayavas, Cassia, Limes, and a small kind of white four plumb, which was much eaten and admired by most of us; but it had such an effect upon us, as to purge us for several days successively; but those more especially, who had been likewise fond of the lusciousness of the Cassia. While we were out of order, a stop was put to our work for a day or two, which detained us here some time longer than we should otherwise have been; but being recovered of this light indisposition, we made an end of getting our wood and water here, and sailed from hence, by the way of Canal Bueno, or the Good Channel, fully determined to surrender at Panama.

*Description*

A. D.

1721.

*Description of the Island of Quibo,  
and Canal Bueno.*

**T**HIS island of Coiba, or Quibo, is almost in the same parallel of latitude with Panama, and is about nine leagues in length, and four in breadth, of a moderate height, all over covered with inaccessible woods, always green, and though it be not, and, perhaps, never was inhabited, but as wild as nature first made it, abounds with Papas, Guayavas, Limes, and some other fruits I never saw before, and can give no name to. All which are near as good, though wholly neglected, and with none to attend them, as those which have great care taken of them, in some other islands, in as promising a latitude. From hence we may infer, the soil in general is fruitful, and if it should ever be inhabited, and cleared of the incumbrances of woods and wildernesses, it is choaked up with at present, it might be made productive of every thing that any, of the best, of our islands do yield in America. But the Spaniards having so much more, on the Continent, than they know what to do with, and it being prudence in them

them not to send away colonies, from amongst them, to people islands, which might weaken their force on the Continent, and knowing, or at least thinking, they are secure from the attempt of any European nation to settle on any of them; it lies neglected. There is a pearl fishery here; but as the pearl-fishers are not able to dive, with their piraguas, in the time of the Vendevals, which is a black stormy season, for four or five months in the year, beginning about June, and ending about November, and being withal so near the Continent, and Panama in particular, which must be a market for a commodity of that price, they have not yet thought it worth their while to inhabit it. All the settlement, they have here, consists of a few huts, scattered up and down, in several parts of this island and Quivetta, made use of by the divers, at the season they come here, to open their oysters, and sleep in. The sandy beach is covered with shells of fine mother of pearl of all sizes, and in going no farther than up to the middle in the sea, you may stoop down and reach large oysters from the bottom. This pleased us at first, not so much with the hopes of finding any valuable pearl in them, as that we might eat them; but when we

came

- A. D. 1721. came to make tryal, we found that nature had not ordained this fish to be at once endued with riches, and afford what was good for food; for they are as hard and tough as so much leather, and by no means palatable. As to any other sorts of fish, as we had no seyne, though there is every where good conveniency for hauling it, I can't say much of them, nor give any account of their various sorts. I can only take notice that we used to observe a large kind of flat fish which often jumped a great height out of the water. These are reported to be very destructive to the pearl-divers, for when they return up again, if they take not great heed, they wrap their broad fins about them, and keep them in their embraces till they are drowned. To prevent this, the divers (who are all Negroes) always carry a sharp pointed knife down with them, and upon sight of any of these, when they return upwards, they carry the point of it above them, and, by that means stick it into the fish's belly, and hinder him from his mischievous intent. There is yet another thing which must make diving, here, a matter of great danger, since the sea hereabouts is undoubtedly troubled with alligators; one of which some of us saw, or fancied we saw,
- swimming



swimming under the water near point Mariato, which is but a few leagues from hence.

A. L.

1721.

Birds.

There is a great variety of birds here, which the woods would not permit us to follow, and also great numbers of black monkeys and guanoes, who mostly frequent the streams of fresh water. There are some guanoes here of an extraordinary size, but as they have been often described by travellers, I shall only take notice to such of my readers who never before heard of them, that they are a large kind of lizard, of various colours, in different places; as for example, the guanoes here are mostly of a brown with yellow streaks about the head, and in other places of a light grey, with black streaks, &c.

You may be as expeditious as you please in watering and wooding here, for the fresh water runs in several streams, larger and smaller, on the sand of the beach, and your wood grows within twenty yards of the seaside; This advantage you will have, especially if you come to an anchor in the manner and place as shall be hereafter directed.

Convenience in wooding and watering.

This island lying about three and a half, or four leagues from the continent, forms the West side of Canal Bueno, so called, as I have already said, from its safety from rocks

B b

and

- A D. and shoals, though you must take care not to  
 1721. be very free with the South end of Quibo,  
 which is low, and has a flat that runs a con-  
 siderable way out from it. In the North en-  
 trance of this channel, lies the island of Qui-  
 vetta, within two miles and a half of the i-  
 sland of Quibo, between which I always an-  
 chored, but took care always to be within  
 half a mile of Quibo. In the little channel  
 between it and Quivetta, are two or three  
 small islands, and some rocks which run along  
 the South end of it. Having gained the North-  
 ern coast of Quibo, you must keep on till  
 you see the opening of the channel, (for till  
 you are near this channel, this island seems  
 to be a part of the continent) which being  
 done, you will immediately see Quivetta, it  
 being easy to be known, by two large rocks  
 off the Northermost end of it. You may  
 then make bold with the shore of Quibo, and  
 so continue to do, till you have shot a little  
 within the land, and then come to an anchor,  
 but not in less than eighteen fathom. But  
 take care in coming in and going out, that  
 you are not drawn too near those rocks off  
 Quivetta, by an eddy which will draw you  
 towards them, as happened to me the first  
 time I weighed from thence, insomuch, that  
 it

Directions  
 for going into  
 Quibo.

it was with much ado, I got clear of them.

A. D.

The tides, or rather the currents, are very uncertain there, for we have had them setting violently one way, for a day or two successively, then slacken, and run with as much rapidity back again; in short, by what I could observe of these tides, they are very uncertain as to duration or swiftness.

1721.

Extraordinary tides.

In weighing from hence, if you intend to go through Canal Bueno to the Southward, you must take care to get well to the Northward of those rocks off Quivetta, and then turn down the channel, because you have not a clear passage between Quibo and Quivetta. For my part, though my people told me there was a deep and commodious bay, to the Southward of the place where I usually lay, where a ship might anchor in the greatest safety, I never sought after it, having the fair season before me. I was, at the same time, unwilling to be closely confined; but if any ship should come to this place in the time of the Vendevals, it might, perhaps, be a good place of refuge both for wooding, watering, and laying a ship on shore in. In short, it is a place I would recommend to any ship, after the coasts have been alarmed, and the enemy's ships of war at sea. They

A. D.

1721.

make a search at all the noted places, that have hitherto been frequented by the English cruifers. This being as yet unknown, and never before made use of, (that I ever heard of) by any English, you may be here without any great danger of being pursued so far. If, however, you should have reason to apprehend it, you lye so near the shore, and the wood and water are so near at hand, that you may make your stay as short as you please, and if you should, at the same time, be short of provisions, you may furnish yourself at point Mariato, as I have already related.

Isle of  
Montuofa.

There are between Quibo and Cape Burica, a great many small islands, but the most remarkable of them all, is Montuofa, the situation and appearance of which, I have already described in my account of our first arrival here, as also of the island of Sebaco, and point Mariato. I must not pass by the isle of Picaro, which lies on the Western side of Quibo.

*Voyage continued.*

Having got clear of this place, and nothing thought of, but our speedy surrender, we met with very strong currents against us, together  
with

with contrary winds and calms, which detained us several days under the mountains of Guanacho.

A. D.

1721.

On May the fifteenth, a small bark taking us for Spaniards, bore down to us; the master of her was mightily surprized when he found his mistake, but recovered on hearing we were bound for Panama, and readily offered to pilot us thither, but had heard of nothing like a truce. He belonged to, and was bound for that port; his vessel was called the Holy Sacrament, and came last from Cheri-qui, laden with dried beef, pork and live hogs. He desired I would take her in tow, complaining the currents so drove him off shore, that he could not fetch the land, though he had a constant fight of it, and that, by this means, all his live cattle were almost dead for want of water. He complained at the same time, that his vessel was so leaky, his people were no longer able to stand at the pumps. Upon the hearing of this, I took her in tow, and kept the master of her on board, sending some of my hands to assist them, at the same time that I spared them as much water and Indian corn as I could.

A vessel  
called the Ho-  
ly Sacrament  
falls in with us

It may appear strange that this opportunity of supplying ourselves with provisions, did

A. D.

1721.

not make an alteration in our intended proceedings towards a surrender. But every one was so tired of the sea, so worn out by a continual want of all necessaries, and disheartened by perpetual misfortunes, that we were willing to embrace any opportunity of going on shore almost at any rate. Indeed, as to myself, I was glad this bark fell into our hands, because, if we found the governour of Sonsonate's account to be false, we might be thoroughly enabled by this help, to go to India. To this end I intended to anchor a great way short of the town of Panama, and keep possession of the Holy Sacrament, in case the President should not have complied with such terms as I should have esteemed safe and honourable; and then we should have it in our power to redress ourselves, by keeping out of his hands; but all this while we had not fully determined who should be the person intrusted with the flag of truce; for my people having known much treachery acted amongst themselves, were apprehensive the person sent, would only, or chiefly, make good his own case to the governour, and not return again. After all, my Son was thought the properest to go, as being sure of his return, if it were purely for my sake. This, and many other difficulties

were

were started, that could not be so easily removed, notwithstanding which, we kept on our way, fully fixed in our resolution.

A. D.

1721.

May the seventeenth, another small bark came down upon us, but having stood pretty near to us, she stood away from us again; I therefore ordered Mr. Raridall to go in our canoe, to inform them of our design, and prevent their loss of time and way; but as soon as they were almost got on board of them, they hoisted their Spanish colours, and fired into our canoe, which made my people be glad to retire, and get out of their reach. After this, she stood in towards a rocky bay, and we after her, till night coming on, it was no longer safe for us to do it. The next morning, being May the eighteenth, my people were divided amongst themselves whether we should look into the bay, to see if this vessel had lain there at anchor all night, or not; and the affirmative carrying it, we stood for the place where we left her the night before. As soon as ever they saw us coming in, they weighed their anchor, and hoisted all their sail, and stood directly in for the bottom of the bay. When I saw this I tacked, and lay braced to, with our head to the sea ward, to prevent them from running themselves on

Meet with a Spanish bark who runs herself on shore to avoid us.

A. D.  
1721.

shore. I also sent the master of our bark (at his own request) with four of our negroes in our canoe, together with a flag of truce, and with orders to tell them, that if it was peace, we would do them no sort of damage. But they neither minded our ship's lying to, nor the flag of truce flying in our canoe, but ran on shore directly, and destroyed their vessel, perhaps with the loss of some or all of their lives.

In the mean time while we were lying to, for our boat to return to us again, there arose a violent gale at South South West, which the Spaniards call a Popagallio, attended with a prodigious shower and storm of rain, thunder and lightning. This violent gust driving us right upon the land, we were in the greatest danger of being lost upon a lee shore; but it pleased God it did not last above two hours, when it came round a little more westerly, and soon after it fell quite calm. However, by this flurry we lost our canoe, and all the people in her, that is, they were driven on shore; all we could hope was, that they were not drowned. The unaccountable shy behaviour of those who thus voluntarily shipwreck'd themselves, rather than fall into our hands, gave us another good reason to believe that



that the governour of Sonfonnate's account of a Cessation of Arms, was groundless and false.

A. D.

1721.

The next morning, *viz.* May the nineteenth, we saw a sail a-head of us, standing along shore, and having now lost our pilot,

Get sight of  
a Spanish ship  
and make sail  
after her.

I was the more desirous of speaking with her, and therefore let go the bark we had in tow, and made all the sail we could after her. We gained very little upon her all the day; but had, nevertheless, got a great way a-head of our bark, wherein were four of our own people, and five Spaniards. The night coming on, and perceiving that we did not come near the ship before us very fast, and seeing but little probability of coming up with her at all, I was inclined to bring to, that the Holy Sacrament might come up with us, rather than run the hazard of losing her, by making a croud of sail all night; but every one was averse to this, from the highest to the lowest. They were obstinate in their opinion, that there could be no Cessation, and would give ear to nothing I could say about it; so all our sail was kept abroad all night, and the next morning, May the twentieth, by day-break, we were within gun-shot of the ship we had been following the day before. I immediately ordered our colours to be spread, and fired a  
gun

A. D.  
1721.

Offer to  
treat with her

gun to leeward, and sent a man upon our poop to wave a flag of truce; but this ship, upon the first sight of our English ensign, fired at us, and so continued to do, with her decks full of men, hollowing and abusing us with the grossest appellations. Notwithstanding all this, I made no return until I came close upon their quarter, and then I sent one of their countrymen to the bow-sprit end, to inform them in Spanish, that we were bound to Panama, and desired to treat peaceably with them, and hoped, at least, they would have some regard to the white flag which they saw flying; but still they continued their fire, and Borachos and Peros Ingleses, i. e. Drunkards and English Dogs, and vile threatnings was all we could get from them. Finding therefore, they were deaf to every thing we could say to them, and that while we were suing for peace, we exposed ourselves in the tamest manner to be knocked on the head, and perceiving that the more submissive our deportment was, the more inhumanly they insulted us, vainly imagining, perhaps, that our strength consisted but of one gun, as when we formerly engaged the Margarita and St. Francisco Palacio, and presuming thereupon, that they were sure of a compleat vi-

tory,

A. D.

1721.

tory, and so should have the satisfaction of carrying us prisoners to Panama; in short, not doubting but, by our quiet behaviour, we had it not in our power to defend ourselves; they, thus filled with presumption, were coming to board us. I no sooner perceived this, than I deemed it full time to begin with them, and therefore I met them with our helm, and soon convinced them of their error; for instead of one gun, we had now nine; and, in a word, we gave them so warm and unexpected a reception, that they sheered round off from us. We just missed getting hold of them, but it falling almost immediately calm, we continued our engagement for the space of two or three hours, at the distance of musquet shot. At length, a breeze wafting us nearer to them, we found that as fast as we approached, so fast did their courage cool. Their captain however, still bravely persisting, and encouraging his people to behave as he would have them, and exposing himself in the openest manner, was, at length, shot through the body, and dropped down dead; upon which they immediately, and with one voice, cried out for quarter, and put an end to our dispute. We called to them to hoist out their launch, but they answered

We engage  
with her.

And in the  
end take her.

A. D.

1721.

swered, that their tackles, and all their rigging in general, was so shattered, they could not possibly do it in any time ; we therefore hoisted out our canoe, which we had taken out of the Holy Sacrament the morning before, and Mr. Randall, and two or three more, went in her on board the prize. They found the prisoners in the most submissive posture, asking for mercy, which they could have no great cause to expect, after their direct breach of the laws of arms and nations, and violation and contempt of our offers to surrender ourselves, to them, in a peaceable manner.

She is called  
the Conception  
de Recova

Mr. Randall sent away the most considerable of the prisoners, who informed me that that their ship was called the de Conception de Recova, belonging to Callao, but that they came last from Guanchaco ; that their ship was of the burthen of two hundred tons, and that she was laden with Flour, Loaves of Sugar, Bales of Boxes of Malmalade, Jars of preserved Peaches, Grapes, Limes, and the like. She mounted six guns, and had seventy odd men on board of her. She was well provided with small arms, and was, in particular, one of those ships who were fitted out, in an extraordinary manner, and commissioned

to

A. D.

1721.

to take us ; so that she was the second of those warlike merchant ships we had taken. In this engagement, the Spanish captain and a negroe were killed, and one or two slightly wounded ; but their rigging, masts and sails were much disabled, particularly their fore-mast, which, by a shot that passed through the body of it, was very much shattered. On our part there was little or no hurt done, except to our gunner, who was slightly wounded in the forehead by a pistol ball, and our main mast, which had a small piece carried out of the side of it. We had now about eighty prisoners of all colours, and not above twenty-six of ourselves.

When the Spanish gentlemen came on board of us, they would not give me time to ask them, how it came to pass they would not hearken to our peaceable offers ; but fell upon excusing themselves, and laying all the fault upon their dead captain ; though they afterwards confessed they were all, in general, glad they had met with us in the morning, and made no doubt they should easily master us. They presumed upon our weakness, and made but little account of us ; but alledged, that after seeing we suffered their fire so long, and heard what we said to  
them,

A. D. 1721. them, they all declared against using any farther force or violence. But the poor gentleman who was dead, (Don Joseph Deforio) vowed in a passion, we should have no terms but his own, and that he would take us by force. And indeed they must all have been of this mind, till they found our strength and resolution, and then perceiving their own case to be desperate, they would have been for a parley. It would certainly have been a welcome morsel to feast their pride with, could they but have obtained what they proposed to themselves; but it pleased Providence to order it otherwise, and their presumption was soon turned into submission. Amongst our prisoners we had several of note, particularly Don Baltazar de Abarca, Conde de Rosa, an European nobleman, who had been governour of Pisco, on the coast of Peru, and was now upon his return to Spain, together with captain Morel, who had formerly been taken by captain Rogers. They were all treated with the utmost civilities, which they the more wondered at, because from a prevailing notion they have formerly had of our cruisers, and from a self conviction of their own ungenerous behaviour towards their prisoners, they could not but expect to have

have been dealt with quite otherwise. I must here observe, that upon their being first sent on board of us, they were astonished to see my people so thin sown, our scanty number not making any manner of show or appearance in so large a ship as ours, and those that remained of us, being clean shaven, they pronounced my people to be lads, and regretted their hard fate in being taken by such an inconsiderable number of boys, as they termed them.

We were now within thirty leagues of Panama, and in the track of all the shipping bound thither from the coast of Peru ; therefore, as we could not think of doing any thing with the Conception, who was so heavily laden with such things (mostly) as could only serve us by way of provisions, our business was to get rid of her as soon as we could. We therefore only spent two days in overhauling her cargo, which was tedious and laborious for my people, though the prisoners did the greatest part of the work.

All this while, little winds and calms prevented us from joining our bark the Holy Sacrament, which we had left behind us, till May the twenty-second. We then had sight of her, and bore down to her, and being pretty

A. D.  
1721.

The Spanish  
crew in the  
Holy Sacra-  
ment murder  
my men who  
were sent to  
assist them.

pretty near to her, we could not but wonder that she only came to and fell off, although all her sails were set; nor could we perceive any body stirring on board of her. As soon as we came up with her, I sent the boat on board, and the officer that went in her immediately called out to tell me there was no soul on board of her, but that her decks and quarters were covered with blood. This was a melancholy hearing, since it plainly appeared by many positive circumstances, that the Spanish crew had murdered those of my people, who were sent to assist them; a cruel return for our kindneſſes and ſervices to them! It ſeemed ſtrange to me, that our men ſhould ſuffer themſelves, or in the leaſt expoſe themſelves to be thus butchered; for they were four in number compleatly armed, and there were but five of the Spaniſh crew, two of which were boys. Theſe miſcreants, doubtleſs, took the opportunity when our people were all aſleep, and then murdered them, not doubting but they ſhould meet with thanks and encouragement for ſo foul a barbarity. The names of thoſe who were thus deſtroyed, were John Giles, John Emblin, John Williams, and George Chappel. But it is very probable theſe murderers paid with their lives, the

loſs



A. D.

1721.

loss of those lives they had taken away ; for being above four leagues from the land, and having no boat with them, they probably jumped into the sea, on the approach of our ship ; thinking they should meet with immediate death if they had fallen into our hands, as the just reward of so horrid a crime ; which they themselves seem to have been so sensible of, that they endeavoured to conceal the deck, which was dyed with gore, by throwing the flocks, and stuffings of beds over it ; so that till they were removed, the blood was not to be seen.

This tragical accident was the occasion of a general melancholy amongst us, and spoiled the satisfaction we had enjoyed for a day or two past, on the account of our late prize. Our prisoners seeing such a sad and sudden change among us, began to be alarmed at it, and looked at one another, as if they all expected to be the victims of our revenge, upon this unhappy occasion.

Ourself  
and our pri-  
soners afraid  
of each other.

This made me fearful, on the other side, lest some dreadful apprehensions of this kind should, on a sudden, drive them on to offer at some desperate attempt upon us, they being eighty in number, and we not above seventeen on board of our own ship, at that

A. D.  
1721.

time, and when we were all together, we were not above twenty-five that could stand on our legs. In this dilemma, I thought it might be best to shew some heat in ordering all the prisoners to go into the stern gallery, which was very large, except the nobleman, and some of the chief of the other passengers and officers, and to order a guard in the great cabin.

Mutual assurances given on both sides of mutual safety.

The Spanish gentlemen who were free from this confinement, observing this, in a very moving manner, lamented to me the unhappy loss of my men, and their own hard fate in having been, in some measure, eye-witnesses of this bloody scene, and let fall some expressions whereby I perceived they were afraid I intended to use some severities, towards their people, on this occasion. Having a good interpreter between us, who was an Englishman we had taken on board the *Conception*, I assured them, that if I was of so revengeful a nature and disposition, the laws of my country deterred me from giving it any indulgence; that I acted by virtue of my King's Commission, who, in his orders, forbade, in the strictest manner, all acts of inhumanity and cruelty towards our prisoners. This assurance I desired might make them

perfectly

per  
not  
then  
had  
and  
them  
tish  
lemn  
of th  
kingd  
larmer  
on the  
secure  
count  
would  
even  
lives o  
so muc  
me, or  
should  
me, fo  
ment t  
Not  
to take  
of the n  
we ther  
side of  
the grea

A. D.

1721.

perfectly easy, within themselves, if they had not a confidence in us sufficient to convince them of the natural abhorrence our Nation had to barbarity. This dispersed their fears, and our discourse on this head was ended by them with great compliments on the British Crown and Government; and with solemn promises, that if it were possible any of those murderers could be living, the two kingdoms of Peru and Mexico should be alarmed to bring them to justice. They then, on their part, begged of me to think myself secure as to themselves, and the rest of their countrymen, my prisoners; for that they would suffer any thing, rather than harbour even the thought of an attempt upon our lives or liberties, not even if they had it ever so much in their power to execute it; assuring me, on their honour, that they thought they should never be able to make a just return to me, for the generous treatment and entertainment they had met with.

Notwithstanding this, it was but prudent to take some measures to secure our prisoners of the meaner sort, and when we had so done, we then hauled the Holy Sacrament along side of us. She was half full of water, and the greatest part of her dried beef was wet

Visit the  
bark HolySa-  
crament.

A. D.  
1721.

and spoiled, but all, that was not damaged, we took out, together with some live hogs, and then gave her to Don Baltazzar de Espina, who, by the Death of captain Joseph Desorio, became captain of the Conception ; and that night we kept a stricter watch than we had been accustomed to before, though none of us had had much sleep since we had taken this ship.

Give our  
prisoners their  
liberty & their  
ship.

The next day, being as willing to get rid of our prisoners, as they were to ~~have~~ their own ship restored to them again, and pursue their voyage ; I delivered the Conception into the possession of Don Baltazzar de Espina. I had taken out of her a twelvemonth's provision of Bread, Flour, Sugar and Sweetmeats, and a like proportion for the Succo's, whom I expected to find at the Tres Marias, being then a stranger to Clipperton's faithless desertion. I likewise took from them their launch and their negroes, to assist us in the management of our ship, well knowing we could not hold out much longer, if the work was not made more easy to my own people : and considering we had a large ship, and a run of a hundred and seventy-five degrees of longitude to sail, which was little less than half way round the world, and even more, allow

ing

ing f  
to m  
extra  
do n  
these  
lors i  
wards  
the c  
those  
out th  
Th  
thing  
prison  
but th  
till th  
they f  
circum  
ner I  
ple, c  
in a m  
ordered  
nine g  
and ou  
good v  
often r  
days in  
to the

A. D.

1721.

ing for the duration we should be obliged to make, for the performance of so long and extraordinary a passage; I thought we could do no other than reinforce ourselves with these Blacks, who are commonly good sailors in these parts, and, indeed, we afterwards found we should never have reached the coasts of Asia, or any other land, in those regions, or parts of the world, without them.

Thus having supplied ourselves with every thing the Conception afforded, I suffered our prisoners to return to their own ship again, but the chief of them would not leave me till they had drawn up a writing which they signed, whereby to acknowledge the circumstances of our engagement, in the manner I have already related. In short, no people, circumstanced as we were, could part in a more friendly manner, than we did. I ordered the Conde de Rosa to be saluted with nine guns, when he put off from our ship, and our late prisoners, in return, wished us a good voyage by way of huzza, which they often repeated. We had had them but three days in our possession, and now restored them to their liberty, the Conception and bark

We take  
leave of each  
other.

A. D. standing with their heads towards Panama,  
1741. and we with ours towards the sea.

Thus were we put by our design of surrendering, and were going to undertake a long and hazardous voyage to Asia. It might well be called hazardous to us, on account of our being but indifferently prepared for it, either as to rigging or sails, although we had taken what we thought could be of any use to us, out of the Conception, and for many other reasons unnecessary to mention here. Our strength indeed, was considerably augmented, for we had now fifteen guns, and ammunition enough to supply them with. This might have been serviceable to us when we arrived on the coasts of Asia, against pirates; but as we were now upon the point of departing from these seas, the Spaniards were free from the danger of being molested by it.

Undertake  
to go to the  
East Indies &  
China.

Before we proceeded any farther, it was necessary to think of getting in a full stock of water. The island of Quibo was too near, and had this other inconveniency attending it, that the Vendovals began to approach, which make, as I have already observed, a season of black and squally weather; and therefore I did not care to trust our ground  
tackling

tackling  
amidst  
should  
when  
of wa  
these  
up to  
soon d  
the tw  
taken  
mong  
the fel  
of mal  
I open  
silver,  
and bei  
weight  
ing the  
es. T  
king o  
in all  
mines  
many o  
ceit serv  
their ki  
An affa  
been di

A. D.

1721.

tackling to the proof of such strong gusts amidst so many small islands ; besides that we should be there too near to Panama, from whence, if there should happen to be a ship of war, she might soon be with us. Upon these considerations it was determined to ply up to Cano, where, having a good boat, we soon did our business. In our passage thither, the sweetmeats of all kinds, which we had taken out of our late prize, were divided among the messes. It happened that one of the fellows, one day, complained he had a box of malmalade which he could not stick his ~~finger~~ into, and desired it might be changed. I opened it, and found in it a cake of virgin silver, moulded on purpose to fill such boxes, and being very porous, it was of near the same weight of so much malmalade. In overhauling the rest, we found five more of these boxes. This was a contrivance to defraud the king of Spain of his fifths, which he claims in all the silver taken out of any of the mines in Peru. We, doubtless left a great many of these boxes behind us, so that this deceit served them in a double capacity, to defraud their king's officers, and blind their enemies. An affair as vexatious as this, is said to have been discovered too late, on board a prize the

A method  
to defraud the  
king of Spain  
in Peru.

A. D. 1721. Success had taken, where they found a very considerable quantity of Pinna's or virgin silver, in the form of bricks, very artfully plastered over with clay, and dried in the sun, which being all the consistence they give their bricks in that country, they were taken to be really such, and a great number of them were thrown overboard as so much rubbish, without any discovery of what they were, till the four or five last pieces. How true this may be I can't say, but it was reported to me, as matter of fact, several of the officers belonging to captain Clipperton.

Division of  
our prize money.

I must here observe, that every thing we took in the Conception, was divided among us according to the Juan Fernandian articles, and that I had no more than six instead of sixty shares. They would not so much as allow me the money I had laid out at St. Catherine's, which was upwards of a hundred pounds; but the thoughts and hopes I then had of meeting with the Success at the Tres Marias, or Puerto Seguro, made me easy, both on the adventurers account, and my own, and I could not doubt of being a welcome guest to captain Clipperton. What confirmed me in the hopes of this, was the repeated assurances captain Clipperton gave me, that he would not

return

return to  
that he  
ports to  
work to  
know h  
far to th  
that our  
thirteen  
that wh  
fornia,  
it was m  
way to v  
might g  
Puerto S  
tear all  
ting this

Thus  
son; bu  
the best  
I left th  
vours to  
I formed  
ends: I  
the natu  
the coast  
was well  
coasts; a  
run into



return to the Southward in five months time ; that he should be obliged to go to one of these ports to refit, and that he had a great deal of work to do. I was, however, at a loss to know how to prevail with my people to go so far to the Northward ; for they had learned that our track, to India, lay in the parallel of thirteen degrees North, or thereabouts ; so that when I talked to them of going to California, they seemed surprized, and told me it was madness to run so much out of our way to windward, and, grumbling, added, we might get to India by the time we should reach Puerto Seguro, and that we should beat and tear all our rigging and sails to pieces, in getting thither.

Thus they argued with a great deal of reason ; but I was resolved to acquit myself in the best manner I could, and not have it said, The people unwilling to go to California.

I left these coasts without using my endeavours to join the Success again, and therefore I formed all the pretences I could to gain my ends : I told them they were all strangers to the nature of the Monsoons and Tufoons on the coasts of India and China, and that I was well acquainted with the seasons on both coasts ; and therefore I assured them we should run into the greatest dangers imaginable, if  
we

A. D.

1721.

A. D. 1721. we arrived in those seas before the latter end of the month of October. I desired them feriously to consider with themselves, that we had almost one half of the globe to go round, before we should have any opportunity to make any repair, or get a supply of any thing that might be wanted ; and that therefore we ought to look carefully for any defects that might be in the ship's bottom, which was but single, and pretty much worm-eaten already ; and that we should bream as low as we could to destroy the worm, and give her a good coat of pitch and tallow, seeing our whole run would be in the way of those destroyers ; and that we ought, moreover, to make a farther trial of our Tank, which had always failed us hitherto, whether by roguery, or for want of being well secured from leaking, we could never yet tell ; observing that as it contained the greatest part of our water, our lives depended upon the firmness of that.

Reasons for  
going to Ca-  
lifornia.

They all approved of my reasoning, but were still extreemly unwilling to<sup>so</sup> go so far to the Northward, and proposed doing all I had mentioned, in the gulph of Amapala, or in that of Nicoya, or somewhere else thereabouts. But in answer to this, I told them it would be unsafe to attempt to do any thing  
in

in any o  
veral por  
was in fu  
formerly  
though l  
four, and  
cel of ca  
the wor  
bottom i  
at sea. I  
nia woul  
a necessit  
over to t  
that ther  
being fu  
Westing  
nia, wou  
lose by go  
from ther  
done our  
our passag  
Having  
from Can  
had favou  
then came  
called the  
from the  
night, that

A. D.  
1721.

in any of those places, the enemy having several ports near at hand; that, in short, it was in such a manner that captain Clipperton formerly had a rich prize retaken from him, though he had with him one ship of twenty four, and another of sixteen guns, yet a parcel of canoes took them both; besides that the worm was more destructive to the ship's bottom in still and muddy water, than when at sea. I urged that therefore going to California would divert our time, as we were under a necessity to wait for a safe season to venture over to the other side of the World in, and that there we should be out of all danger of being surprized by the enemy. That the Westing we should gain in going to California, would make amends for what we should lose by going so far to the Northward, and from thence I did not doubt, after we had done our business, but that we should gain our passage in forty or fifty days.

Having thus effected my desire, I weighed from Cano, steering to the Northward, and had favourable gales for forty-eight hours; then came on the constant, or what may be called the trade wind on this coast, blowing from the West North West, except in the night, that it comes about a little more North-  
erly

Agreement  
to go to Cali-  
fornia.

A. D.  
1721.

erly, and sometimes, but very rarely, in the height of the sea-breeze at West South West, and South West. These winds being as contrary to us they well could be, we made but a poor hand of it in gaining to windward; and having before experienced the tediousness of coasting along this shore, I was willing to try how far off these winds might prevail, which, in my opinion, may be called the eddy of the true trade wind, whose course may be perverted, by the interposition of this vast mountainous continent.

Leave the  
coast of Mex-  
ico, for the of-  
fing.

Accordingly I found that at the distance of sixty leagues, we had light winds and variable, and that at the distance of between seventy and eighty leagues, it settled at East North East, and North East. I therefore kept at this distance from the land, till we had run up to the height of twenty degrees North. In all this passage, we were not in the least sensible of any currents, and entirely out of the way of certain riplings and overfalls of water, which we frequently met with nearer to the land, and often surprized us when we have been becalmed in deep water.

Falls of wa-  
ter on the coast

We used to hear a noise as of the fall of water passing through a bridge, a considerable way before the water itself came to us, and it

would

wou  
effe  
fwer  
ring  
met  
shore  
gaine  
have  
hour  
falls  
Eastv  
not o  
been  
black  
the co  
going  
had  
and v  
with  
In  
vast fl  
Albic  
which  
much  
water  
phin,  
and fo  
swims

A. D.

1721.

would pass by us at a very great rate. All the effect it had on the ship, was to make her answer the helm wildly, if we had any wind stirring ; but when it has happened that we have met with these moving waters very near the shore, we could not perceive that we either gained or lost any way by them, though we have continued in them for a quarter of an hour together. I have observed these overfalls to come both from the Westward and Eastward ; but by getting out to sea, we were not only clear of the inconveniences I have been mentioning, but were also out of the black season, which began to shew itself on the coasts ; for at the island of Cano, and in going thither, we felt very hard gusts, and had black lowering weather, with frequent and violent thunder and lightning, attended with heavy showers of rain.

In this passage we were accompanied by vast shoals of fish, such as Dolphin, Bonita, Albicore, and what we called the Angel-fish, <sup>The Angel-fish.</sup> which is in shape like a Salmon, and is scaled much in the same manner ; but, when in the water, it has some resemblance of the Dolphin, because of the beauty of its colours, and for eating is, I think, the best fish that swims near the surface. But we were continually

A D.

1721.

nually incommoded by numerous flocks of the birds so well known by the name of Boobies, who are generally the attendants of such shoals of fish; they disobliged us very much with their dung; for our ship being their resting place, they painted all our yards, tops, and decks, which they fouled as fast as we could clean them. However, for change of diet, some of my people made ragouts of them, and the smoakers made stems for their pipes of their long wing bones.

Make Cape  
Corientes and  
the Tres Ma-  
rias.

We fell in with Cape Corientes in the beginning of the month of August, and were carried away to the islands called the Tres Marias by a hard gale at South, and came to an anchor under the lee of the middlemost of these islands, but had no sight of the Success, and could see no sign of her having been there at all. After a tedious search on all the three islands for fresh water, there was nothing like a stream of it that we could find. This was the more astonishing to us, by as much as one or two of our late navigators have reported that fresh water is to be found there in sufficient plenty. It may have been so when they were there.

No water  
on the Tres  
Marias.

As there was no such refreshment to be found by us, it may be possible that all a ship may

may ha  
may be  
be stre  
certain

After  
islands,  
lifornia,  
August.  
discover  
the ship  
ing, it

to us on  
before th  
come on  
great ma  
them, th  
seeing ou  
gether w  
angry co  
They wo  
They th  
which de  
strange p  
ther of u  
mence, a  
continual  
or running  
on, from

may have to depend on at the Tres Marias, A. D. 1721.  
 may be Turtle; though, after all, there may  
 be streams of fresh water running there at  
 certain times and seasons of the year.

After having been three days among these Arrival on the coast of  
 islands, I stretched over for the coast of Ca- California.

lifornia, and arrived there on the eleventh of  
 August. The inhabitants, as soon as they  
 discovered us, made fires all along the shore as  
 the ship ran by them; and towards the even-  
 ing, it falling calm, two of them came off Two Indi-  
ans come off  
to us.  
 to us on a Bark-log, but were a long time  
 before they would accept of our invitation to  
 come on board of us. At length, after a  
 great many pressing signs which we made to  
 them, they ventured in; when, in a moment,  
 seeing our Blacks promiscuously standing to-  
 gether with us white men, they, with very  
 angry countenances, separated them from us.  
 They would hardly suffer them to look at us.  
 They then made signs for us all to sit down,  
 which done, one of them put himself into  
 strange postures, and ran from one to the o-  
 ther of us, talking to us with great vehe-  
 mence, and seeming to be in a sort of frenzy,  
 continually singing (in their way) or speaking,  
 or running about with great fury and agitati-  
 on, from which nothing could divert either of  
 them

A. D. 1721. them for some time. The night coming on, they were for departing, and we gave them a knife or two, an old coat, and some other trifles, which seemed to please them very well. They expressed themselves by signs in such a manner, that we could guess they gave us repeated invitations to go on shore with them.



S E C T,





## S E C T. XIV.

*Arrival in Puerto Seguro, in the latitude of twenty-three degrees five minutes North, in the Southermost part of California.*

ON Sunday the thirteenth of August, at day-break, we found ourselves near Puerto Seguro, which may be readily known by three white rocks, not much unlike the Needles of the Isle of Wight.

You will not discover the road until you are round these rocks, and must keep close on board the outermost to fetch into the bay. But of this I shall speak more fully when I come to the description of this place; and shall therefore, return to give an account of the behaviour of the inhabitants, upon this coast, on our approach to them. Some of them came out on their Bark-logs to meet us, whilst others got upon the tops of the hills and rocks on the sea-side, where they made fires for us. There seemed to be very great joy among

D d

those

A. D. 1721. those that were on the rocks to see us come in, incessantly running up and down to one another, while those who came out to us on Bark-logs, paddled with all their strength, as if impatient to have a nearer view of us. Thus we entered Puerto Seguro, surrounded by numbers of these small embarkations, while the shore, on all sides, was crowded with Indians, whose numbers visibly increased by multitudes which flocked together from the adjacent parts.

Our anchor was no sooner down, than they came off to us in shoals, some few on their Bark logs, but most of them swimming, talking and calling out to one another in a noisy and confused manner, but such as plainly shewed how desirous they were to come to us. Our ship was in an instant full of these swarthy gentlemen quite naked, and amongst the rest was their King, or Chief-man, whom, in the croud, we could not distinguish from the rest. The only ensign of power which he bore about him, was a black round stick made of a hard wood, of about two foot and a half in length. This being observed in his hand, by some of my people, they brought him to me; and he, concluding me to be the chief of the ship, in a very unexpected manner, delivered

to

A. D.

1721.

to me his black stick, which I immediately returned to him. This man, notwithstanding the wildness of his appearance to us, had a good countenance, and his behaviour had something that was very engaging in it. I was, at first, at a loss to know how to entertain our numerous guests, but at length I thought it would not be amiss to regale them with some of our liquid sweetmeats, which we had in great plenty. I therefore ordered what deep dishes I had, to be brought on the deck, and the jars were broached, and the dishes filled with the choicest of Peruvian conserves; and they were accommodated with spoons. Though they could not sit very regularly to their entertainment, because of their numbers, who had all an equal welcome to the good cheer; yet, as we kept continually replenishing their empty dishes, they were all satisfied, and had as much as they cared to eat. Their food they liked extremely well, if I may have leave to affirm it from the eagerness they dispatched it with; and the spoons, which were, mostly, silver, they returned with great honesty, which they would doubtless have done, had they been gold, the value of those metals be-

A. D. 1721. ing, at that time, whatever it may be hereafter, utterly unknown to them.

Having thus commenced a friendship with these Indians, I thought it might not be unsafe to send an officer on shore to take a view of the watering place; but to make him the more welcome, I sent with him some coarse blue bays, and some sugar, as a present to their women, amongst whom it was to be equally distributed. Their Chief seeing our boat ready to put off, was for waiting on her with his Bark-log, but I, as well as I could, entreated him to take a passage in our boat, which he seemed to be mightily pleased with.

The remainder of the day was spent in an interview between us and our new visitors, who behaved themselves in general, very quietly and peaceably. The officer returning from the shore, with an account of a civil reception, we prepared to send our casks on shore the next morning. Indeed from some accounts I had read concerning these people, I did not apprehend any molestation from them in wooding and watering, though a first view of the country and inhabitants might dishearten one a little from venturing quite freely amongst them. They even appeared so terrible to our Negroes, who had been born in  
Guinea,

Guinea  
the of  
ry stor  
boat, a  
to def  
this dr  
the an  
that ca  
Negro  
As foo  
swam  
ship, to  
day.

By  
on sho  
and fil  
up, we  
guests,  
weary  
nothing  
the am  
them,  
shore,  
a Neg  
ing of h  
tators o  
to ende  
whethe

Guinea, that one of them who was sent with the officer on shore, and was otherwise a very stout fellow, was afraid to stir from the boat, and all the time kept an axe in his hand to defend himself in case of an attack; but this dread may perhaps have proceeded from the anger or contempt which the two first that came off to us, had expressed towards our Negroes, by driving them from the Whites. As soon as night approached, all our Indians swam to the shore again, and left us a clear ship, to rest ourselves in after the fatigue of the day.

By day-break next morning, our boat went on shore, with those designed to cut the wood and fill the water; and before the sun was up, we were again cröuded with our former guests, who seemed as if they could never be weary of gazing at us and our ship. But that nothing might be wanting in us to keep up the amity we had already contracted with them, I ordered a great boiler to be carried on shore, with good store of flour and sugar, and a Negroe cook, who was continually boiling of hasty pudding, for the numbers of spectators on the beach; and it really behoved us to endeavour to keep in their favour, since, whether in the ship, or on the strand, we were

A. D. wholly in their power, those on shore being  
1721. perpetually surrounded by multitudes of them,  
while we in the ship were, from morning till  
night, so incommoded by them, that we could  
hardly move, fore and aft, through the throng  
of them.

They at first proved to be no better to us than  
idle spectators, till, perhaps, their natural com-  
passion for the few of my men, whom they  
saw rolling of great and cumberfom casks of  
water over the heavy sand, in the sultry heat  
of the day, inclined them to help us. To this  
may be added, a sense of the kind treatment  
they met with from us, and the particular  
readiness of their chief to serve us, by shew-  
ing his people a good example. For, after  
Mr. Randall, my lieutenant, he himself took  
up the second log of wood to carry to the  
boat, and was immediately followed by two  
or three hundred of them, who all took to  
the work. This was a great ease and relief  
to my people, and shortened the time of our  
staying here. What was still more, they  
rolled our casks down to the boat, but always  
expected a white slave to assist them, who, if  
he did but touch it with his finger, it was  
sufficient encouragement for them to perse-  
vere in their labour. We even found means

to

to make those who used to be all the day on board the ship, useful to us; for when we came to heel her, we crouded them all over on one side, which, together with other shifts, gave her a very considerable heel, while we cleaned and payed her bottom with pitch and tallow; and they were so tractable, that they would all of them sit very quietly on the side they were bid to go, till we ordered them to disperse themselves, that we might bring the ship upright upon her keel again. In this manner they repaid our civilities with their services, and every day they seemed more and more fond of us. When our boat went on shore in the morning, there was a constant equipage waiting for our people on the beach, and particularly for those who, by a better dress, they guessed to be above the common sort. These they always received with such formality as could not be expected in such a place; for as soon as they came out of the boat, they were immediately laid hold of by two Indians, who led them between them, and were followed by a great many couples of Indians, hand in hand; thus were they led up to the river, and then left to their own liberty to proceed in the direction and execution of their business.

A. D.

1721.

Mean while, the rumour of our arrival was spread through all the neighbouring parts, and some of clans different from those who inhabited the land about this bay, came daily to take a view of us. Those who came from any distance in the country could not swim, and that they were different from those we had first seen, on our arrival here, appeared by their manner of painting themselves, and by other little distinctions, which were visible amongst them ; but they all united to assist us, nor were any of them idle but the women, who used to sit in companies on the scorching sand, waiting for their share of what was going forward, which they used to receive without any quarreling, amongst them, about the inequality of the distribution of it, although some who had nothing to serve them instead of spoons, fared but poorly. But at last there were few of them that had not something to serve them by way of a spoon, encouraged thereto by our constant supplies of fare, with which we fed several hundreds of them every day. In a word, they thought themselves happy in us, and we thought ourselves fortunate in meeting so timely and necessary an assistance from them ;  
for

for with  
men r  
rous sic  
heat of  
out by  
so long

Have  
space o  
August  
departu  
the mo  
of fugar  
we gav  
old iron  
These  
and of  
return  
bows a  
squirrel

That  
them as  
fired on  
of whic  
seeing  
upon t  
discerne  
men we  
execute



for without it, it is more than probable my men might have contracted some dangerous sickness in working so laboriously in the heat of the day, after being, in a manner, worn out by what they had already undergone, for so long a series of time past.

A. D.

1721.

Having done all our business here, in the space of five days, we, on the eighteenth of August, in the morning, prepared for our departure in the afternoon. We employed the morning in making a large distribution of sugar amongst the women. To the men we gave a great many knives, old axes, and old iron, which we had taken in our prizes. These were the most useful things to them, and of which they stood most in need; in return for which, some of them gave us bows and arrows, deer-skin bags, live foxes, squirrels, and the like.

We depart  
from Calicut-  
nia.

That we might appear as considerable to them as possible, I ordered five guns to be fired on the loosing of our top-sails, the noise of which greatly amazed them; and upon seeing our sails loosed, there was a damp upon their spirits, which might be easily discerned in their countenances. Their women were all in tears, when my people had executed their orders, and were coming off

to

A. D. 1721. to the ship. A great many of the men staid in the ship all the while we were purchasing our anchor, and did not offer to stir from us till we were under sail, and then with most dejected looks leaped over-board, to swim back to the shore. That very evening we took our departure from cape St. Lucar, in our way to China. But I must stop here to give some account of this country and inhabitants, which we are as little acquainted with, as with any of the known parts of the world.

*Description of the Southermost part  
of California, and its inhabitants.*

AS to the bounds and extent of California, our geographers have yet never been able to determine, either from their own observations, or by information from others, whether it be an island, or part of the continent of North America. The English who have been here, have neither had time nor opportunity to go about this discovery, which, if compleated, might be of very little use to us, whatever satisfaction it might afford to  
the

the c  
her v  
appre  
time,  
the Sp  
ous, a  
so inte  
voyage  
the tra  
think  
to run  
benefit  
to ha  
mid-p  
tempt  
fions.  
Ameri  
to the  
bably,  
yet hid  
discove  
The  
which  
tainous  
parts o  
the foil  
it may  
rich bl

A. D.

1721.

the curious. The Manila ship indeed, in her way to Acapulco, might, as has been apprehended, with no considerable loss of time, make this and other discoveries ; but the Spaniards are grown indolent and incurious, and in that ship in particular, they are so intent on the safe performance of their voyage, and the great profits they derive from the trade they carry on, that they can scarce think of any thing else. As they are obliged to run into a very Northern latitude for the benefit of a Westerly wind, they are said to have sometimes had soundings in their mid-passage ; but I never heard they attempted to make any land upon these occasions. But, by this, it may be presumed that America and Asia are joined by a tract of land to the Northward ; but since that, and, probably, many other coasts and countries are as yet hid from us, I shall leave them to future discoveries.

The Eastern coast of that part of California, which I had a sight of, appears to be mountainous, barren, and sandy, and very like some parts of the coast of Peru ; but, nevertheless, the soil about Puerto Seguro, and, very likely, it may be the same in most of the vallies, is a rich black mould, which as you turn it fresh

up

A. D.

1721.

up to the sun, appears as if intermingled with gold dust. Some of this glittering soil we endeavoured to wash and purify and separate from the dirt; and the more we attempted it, the more what so shone and glittered seemed to be gold, which made us bring away some of it, to make some better essay and trial of it, with persons of more skill and judgment, than ourselves. We did so, but what we brought away was lost in the midst of our troubles and confusion afterwards in China. However illusive, the shining particles in this soil may have been, there can be no great doubt but this country affords metals of the most precious kinds.

Here is plenty of wood, but the trees of what kind soever they may be, which we could not discover, are no better than dwarfs to appearance; and when we were there, their leaves were so eaten up and devoured by inconceivable swarms of locusts, that they gave the country the appearance of a sort of winter, which else could never be observed in this climate. In the day-time these locusts are perpetually on the wing, and were very troublesome and offensive to us, by flying in our faces. These locusts are the same with those which make such ravages on some parts of our continent, and have been

been f  
to an  
such f  
vered,  
dies.  
have b  
plague  
fore,  
season  
bitants  
bean, a  
In a wo  
that wa  
river fr  
Puer  
Cavend  
eastward  
Southern  
right un  
to know  
going i  
tioned,  
a bank o  
as you g  
the dept  
take care  
Southern  
ter; for

been seen with us. No sooner did we come to an anchor but they came off to us in such swarms, that the sea about us was covered, and discoloured with their dead bodies. I know not that any of the few who have been here, have taken notice of this plague of locusts hereabouts; and therefore, in hopes they may be here at this season of the year only, I gave the inhabitants a large parcel of calavances, a sort of bean, and shewed them how to sow them. In a word, these locusts had spared nothing that was green, except the reeds in the little river from whence we filled our water.

Puerto Seguro, so called by Sir Thomas Cavendish, is about two leagues to the North-eastward of Cape St. Lucar, which is the Southermost land of California, and is almost right under the tropic of Cancer. The marks to know it by, and the chief direction for going into this port, I have already mentioned, and shall now only add, that there is a bank of sand on the Northern side of you, as you go in, on which you may anchor from the depth of sixteen to eight fathoms; but take care that you do not fall too near to the Southern side, where there is very deep water; for this bank shelves away very fast from

A D.

1721.

A. D.

1721.

from the Northern shore ; and therefore be sure that you are well on this bank before you come to, and then drop your anchor any where between the depths I have mentioned, and lay your moorings South East and North West, with a good scope of cable. I rode in thirteen fathom, and lay open to the sea, from the East by North to the South East by South. During my stay at this place, the wind prevailed from the West South West, to the West by North, which rendered this a commodious harbour to us : but if the wind should come fresh out of the sea, it would be otherwise, as here is room for very little drift. We did not ride above half a mile from the shore, and of course this would have been an indifferent read in such a case. From the South East to the West of this port or bay, it is rocky and mountainous, and from the West to the North by West, it is low, and covered with bare trees at this season, and from the North by West, to the North North East there are three indifferent high mountains of nearly the same appearance and bigness with each other, and from these the land shelves very regularly till it forms a low point, which bore East by North of us as we lay at anchor,

and

and the  
the en

The  
is on t  
emptie  
This v  
the app  
which  
touch.

In short  
ed conv  
to lay in  
out of th  
have be

The  
Their lin  
and bare  
The Wo  
hair is m  
some of  
of both  
we thou  
complexi  
seen in t  
of a deep

and this is the Eastermost point that forms the entrance of the bay. A. D. 1721.

The watering place we were supplied from, is on the North side, in a small river, which empties itself through the sand into the sea. This will be conspicuous from the ship, by the appearance of the green reeds or canes which grow in it, and which the locusts never touch. This water is excellent for sea service. In short, the port in general may be reckoned convenient for such as may have occasion to lay in wait for the Manila ship, or to keep out of the way, for some time, after the coasts have been thoroughly alarmed. Watering Place

The Men are tall, stait, and well made. Their limbs are large, their hair coarse and black and barely reaches down to their shoulders. The Women are of a much smaller size, their hair is much longer than the mens, and with it some of their faces are almost covered. Some of both sexes have good countenances, but we thought them to be of a much darker complexion than any of the Indians we had seen in the coasts of these seas, these being of a deep copper colour. Account of the Inhabitants.

The

A. D. The men go quite naked, and have not  
 1721. the least thing to cover them. They wear no-  
 Mengo quite thing at all but a few trifles, which they look  
 naked upon as ornaments, such as a band of red  
 and white silk grafs, which some wear round  
 their heads, adorn'd on each side with a tuft  
 of hawk's feathers. Others have pieces of  
 mother of pearl, and small shells ty'd in their  
 hair, and hanging about their necks. Some  
 of them have large necklaces of fix or seven  
 strings, compos'd of small red and black dri-  
 ed berries; some are scarified all over their  
 bodies in variety of figures, while others use  
 a kind of daubing or paint, some besmear-  
 ing only their faces and breasts with black,  
 while others were regularly painted all over  
 from the face to the navel with black, and  
 from thence down to the feet with red.

The women on the contrary wear a thick  
 fringe of silk grafs, which hangs down to  
 their knees, and have a deer skin carelessly  
 wrapped over their shoulders. Some of the  
 better sort wear the skin of a large bird.

Their Man-  
 ner and Dif-  
 position.

From what I have been relating of their  
 personal appearance, it may well be con-  
 cluded that nothing can be more wild and  
 savage to look at. But there is a wide dif-  
 ference between what one would, upon first  
 sight,

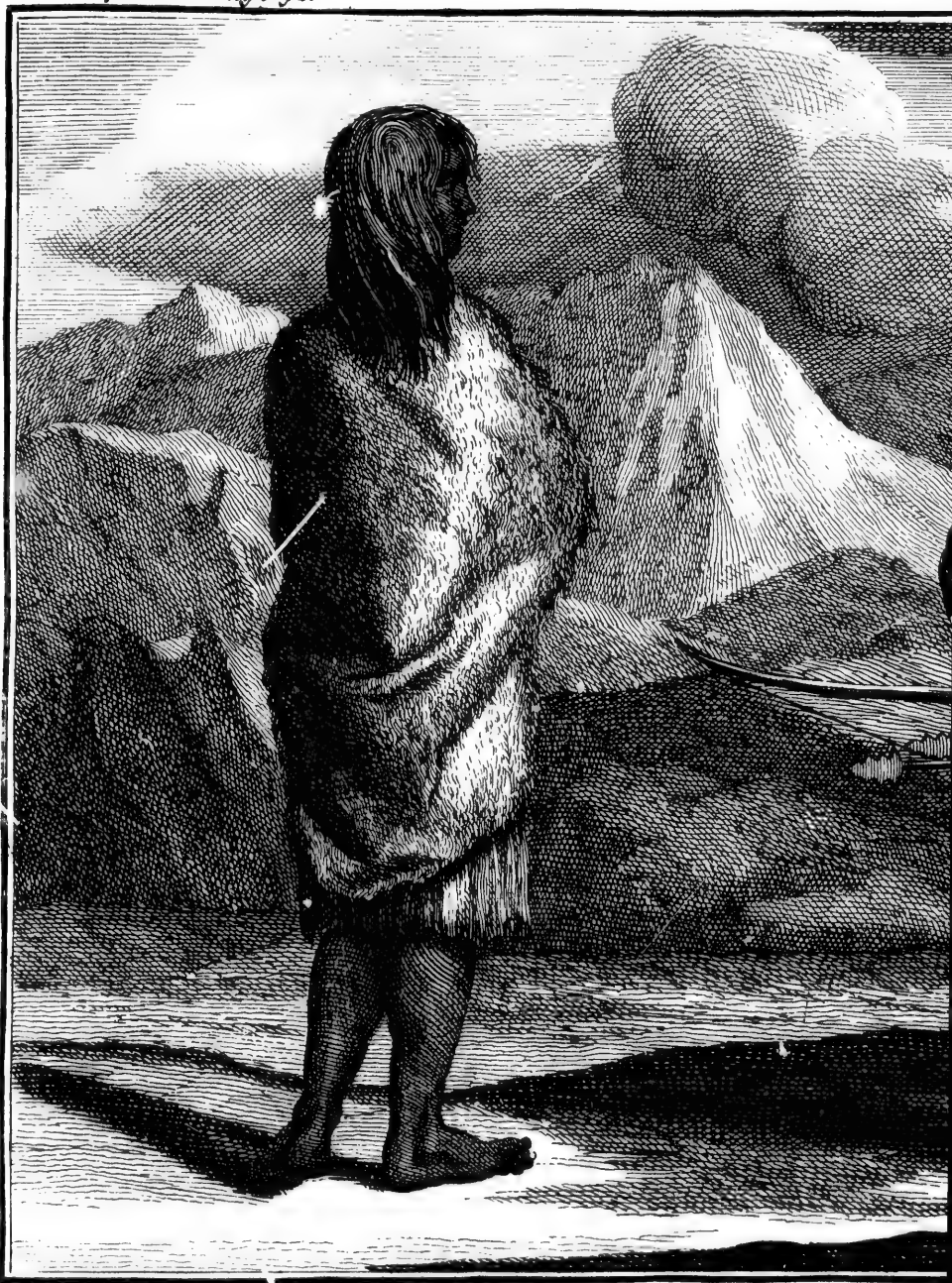


e not  
r no.  
look  
f red  
ound  
a tuft  
es of  
n their  
Some  
seven  
ck dri-  
r their  
ers use  
f smear-  
a black,  
all over  
k, and  
d.  
a thick  
own to  
carelessly  
e of the  
rd.  
of their  
be con-  
ild and  
vide dif-  
pon first  
fight,



*he other in that of a Deer.*

To follow Page 416



J. Pine Sculpt.

Two Californian Women, the one in a Birds, Sk



*in a Birds, Skin the other in that of a Deer.*

fight  
they  
we  
war  
towa  
natu  
conf  
ther  
mon  
obse  
able  
alwa  
had  
mon  
They  
by p  
be p  
no p  
in eit  
ed to  
and t  
Th  
have  
and c  
but t  
drink  
which  
civiliz

fight, expect to find from them, and what they really appeared to us to be ; for by all we could discern in their behaviour towards one another, and in their deportment towards us, they are endued with great good nature. All the time we were there, and constantly in the midst of crouds of them, there was nothing to be perceived but harmony and affection amongst them. We observed that when we gave any thing eatable to any one of them in particular, he always divided it into as many shares as he had companions about him, and most commonly reserved little or nothing for himself. They seldom walked single, but went mostly by pairs, hand in hand. They appear to be perfectly tractable. We could observe no particular signs or indications of cruelty in either their aspects, or actions. They seemed to keep their women at some little distance, and that was all.

They seem to lead a careless life, and to have every thing in common amongst them, and can be supposed to search for nothing but the bare necessities of life, viz. meat and drink ; which frees them from the anxieties which disturb the thoughts of nations more civilized, and more refined. Their content-

A. D.

1721.

Their affection for each other.

A. D. 1721. ment made them honest, for they never offered to pilfer or steal any of our tools, and other utensils, though they might have been of great service to them. As an instance of

Their honesty. ho- this in particular; some of our men, who had been cutting of wood all day, and were coming on board in the evening, heedlessly forgetting that they had left their axes behind them, in the wood; it was observed, by one of the Indians standing by, that they had not taken their tools with them. The Indian took notice of this neglect to their king, or chief (who was also standing to see our boat go off) and he sent him directly into the woods to fetch the axes, which he accordingly did, and deliver'd them to our people with a seeming satisfaction that they did not go away without them. In a word, they seem to pass their lives, according to the notions we have of the purest simplicity of the earliest ages of the world, before discord and contention were heard of amongst men; which must be owing to the great distance of their situation, and their being so much out of the reach of those who might have taught them other things. As yet then these Californians may be said to act according to the dictates of nature, whilst we often al-

low

low  
mor  
has  
give  
ing  
in y  
can  
of fi  
it ap  
than  
men  
of th  
the r  
at it.  
ing th  
ny pr  
that  
ance  
after  
they  
would  
ver w  
suffer  
I had  
work  
on th  
alway

A. D.

1721.

Misrepre-  
sented.

low ourselves to act contrary to the just remonstrances of our reason. A late navigator has represented them to be idle, lazy, and given to be jealous of their women, alledging he never saw any of them that were not in years. It is, in a manner, certain that they can be practised in no sort of labour but that of fishing and hunting. If they are slothful, it appeared, to us, to proceed more from disuse than disinclination to work. As for their women we had the company of some hundreds of them, young and old, every day; nor did the men ever seem to take the least umbrage at it. On our part we so much avoided the giving them any offence, and made them so many presents, trifles to us, but not so to them, that I dare say, they will not refuse their assistance to those whose chance it may be, to come after us. It is particularly remarkable that they would never suffer us to take snuff; but would earnestly take it from us, whenever we attempted it. Nor would they ever suffer us to look through a spying-glass, which I had frequent resort to, to see how our work, of wooding and watering, was followed on the shore. In these two instances, they always took upon them to controul us, and in

E c 2

these



A. D. these two only ; the causes of which we are  
1721. to seek for.

Their lan-  
guage.

Their language we could make nothing of. It seemed to us to be harsh and guttural. They talked very much among themselves. I had once a thought of bringing away with me, some of the youngest, that they might learn our language, and give us some information of their country ; but as we could not make them understand us, we must have seemed, to them, to have done this by force, which might have exasperated them ; and as it might have produced mischief to such ships as might have occasion to seek for succour, or shelter, there after us, I soon laid aside all thoughts of that design.

Their man-  
ner of living.

Their manner of living, in general, may be soon described. Their dwellings, which we saw but little of, are said to be very mean, and scarce able to shelter them. Their diet I believe, is mostly of fish, especially at this season of the year, which they frequently eat raw, though they sometimes bake it in the sand. They seldom can want a supply of this, the men being expert harpooners. They go out to sea on their bark-logs, which are only composed of five logs of a light wood, made fast to each other by wooden pegs ; and

on

on the  
ble p  
are n  
the la  
struck  
us, w  
of th  
them  
they h  
would  
had st  
embar  
and h  
pleased  
give th  
particu  
struggl  
in this  
ing sea  
one fe  
conclud  
hunting  
and so  
rels, of  
rently,  
their pr  
scarce a



A. D.

1721.

on these they venture out, rowing with a double paddle, and with their harpoons, which are made of a sort of hard wood, they strike the largest albigores, and bring them in when struck. This was altogether surprizing to us, who had so often experienced the strength of that fish, and the difficulty of getting them into our ship, at certain times, when they have been either hooked, or struck. One would imagine, that as soon as these Indians had struck one of these albigores, on his light embarkation, it would run away with him and his bark-log, and carry him wherever it pleased ; but they either strike them so as to give them some mortal wound, or have some particular way of managing them, that they struggle and resist in vain. When we were in this port, it was apparently their fishing season, but by the number of deer-skins one sees amongst them, it is natural to conclude, they have also their season for hunting. The skins of their deer are grey, and so are the skins of their foxes and squirrels, of all which, it is likely, they eat indifferently, as of most other animals that become their prey. Of birds, amongst them, we saw scarce any, but a few pelicans.

- A. D.** What these Indians use instead of bread, is  
 1721. very remarkable. It is a small black seed of  
 Their bread. an oily substance, which they grind, much  
 the same way, as we do our chocolate, and  
 afterwards make it up in some such manner.  
 The looks of these black lumps or rolls, so  
 made up, is not very inviting, yet the taste is  
 not very disagreeable. When they want to  
 drink, they go up to their middle in the ri-  
 ver, and there take up the water between  
 their hands, or stoop down and suck it up  
 with their mouths. Thus between hunting,  
 fishing, eating and sleeping, their time is di-  
 vided, and it is likely that by these exercises,  
 and the sparingness of their diet, their lives  
 Great age. are prolonged to a great length; and indeed  
 many, of both sexes, live to a very great age, if  
 we may guess by the very great and extraor-  
 dinary appearances of it in some of both sexes.
- Their arms. Their arms are bows and arrows. Their  
 bows are about six foot in length, and their  
 arrows seem to be somewhat too long for  
 their bows. Considering their want of tools  
 to make such things with, it must take them  
 up a great deal of time, in the making, and  
 contriving of them. Their bow-strings are  
 made of deer's sinews, and their arrows are  
 composed of a hollow cane, for two thirds of  
 their

their length, and the other third next the point, is of a heavy kind of wood, which is headed with a piece of flint, and sometimes with a kind of agate, the edges of which are indented, or cut in teeth like a saw. The point of this flint, or agate, is worked so as to be pretty sharp. They made no manner of shew of their arms to us, and it was rarely that we saw them in the hands of any of the men. The women had them, in the woods, in search of game, which may be thence presumed to be some part of their employment. Upon the whole, they seem, in general, to have need of arms, to save and defend them from wild beasts; for we could perceive some of the men to have received great hurts from them; particularly one old man, who had had one of his thighs most miserably torn and mangled, by the teeth, or talons, or both, of some furious beast or other; of which the scar, or rather scars, were a very evident and extraordinary proof.

It would, perhaps, be too formal to enter upon a discourse concerning their government. Their government.

It is most likely to be as simple as their manners, of which I have been saying as much as I know. That their king or chief is treated with particular respect, appeared by

A. D.

1721.

the train which followed him, in couples, and always hand in hand. In this manner was he coming out of the woods, the first morning after our arrival, when observing one of my officers employed in cutting down a tree, and perceiving some silver lace on his waistcoat, he immediately took an opportunity of shewing both his authority and civility, by ordering one of his attendants to take the ax from him, and work in his stead.

A remarkable instance of their activity in the water.

Before I conclude this section, I cannot but acquaint my reader with a remarkable instance of the activity of these people in the water, which one would almost take to be their natural element. It happened one day, while I was there, that a monstrous kind of flat fish was sunning himself, on the surface of the water, near the shore. Some of the Indians seeing him, went into the water, to the number of twelve or thereabouts, and surrounded him, who finding himself disturbed, dived to get from them. They dived after him, and it was with much difficulty he got from them the first time. In about an hour afterwards, he appeared again, and sixteen or seventeen of the Indians swam off to him, and encompassed him as before, and by tormenting him after a manner peculiar

to

to th  
stren  
sibly  
touch  
struck  
presse  
ans i  
eager  
lift hi  
patch  
Randa  
pened  
in piec  
This f  
fourtee  
not fo  
was of  
had a  
given  
can, of  
procee  
his  
his

to themselves, they, by their art, for their strength could have been of no avail, insensibly drove him on shore. When his belly touched the ground, the force with which he struck the beach with his fins is not to be expressed, no more than the agility of the Indians in avoiding his blows, and who were eager to kill him, for fear lest the surf should lift him a-float again. They at length dispatched him by the help of a dagger, which Randall, my lieutenant, lent them, as he happened to be standing by. They soon cut him in pieces, which were distributed to all comers. This fish, by the nearest computation, was fourteen or fifteen feet in breadth, though not so much in length. Notwithstanding he was of the flat kind, he was very thick, and had a hideous large mouth. Thus having given the most exact and faithful relation I can, of this country and its inhabitants, I shall proceed towards the sequel of my voyage.

*this fish is called Devil fish from his colour his skin being black alias y Chimney sweep*



A. D.

1721.



## S E C T. XV.

*Containing some remarks on the passage into the Great South Sea, and some instructions to such as may for the future go to cruise on the Western coasts of North and South America.*

**B**EING on the point of leaving these parts of the world, I think no place could be more proper than this, from whence to take a retrospect of the navigation of these seas, and on these coasts; and such an one as may be of general use, at least to such as may resort hither for the time to come, and who can never be too well informed of what it may be necessary for them to know. To be as useful as I can, in regard to this, I shall, as I go along, point at the rocks on which we split; partly by our distresses, and partly by not knowing better how to avoid them.

First,

*L. Engraving  
An Introduction  
to the Return*

✱  
✱

age  
me  
the  
ern  
ica.

ving  
hink  
than  
f the  
asts;  
e, at  
ne to  
rmed  
now.  
his, I  
s on  
, and  
avoid

First,



*L. F. de Sauter*  
An Indian of Southernmost parts of California  
as Returning from Fishing & another on his Barklog

Fi  
the C  
touch  
lutely  
over-  
the S  
coast  
you  
it sho  
fortun  
that c  
St. C  
in all

TH  
wife o  
most  
man,  
sea-ch  
any m  
attrib  
Whe  
Juan  
things  
moran  
towan  
which  
rowed



First, then, if your design be to cruise in the Great South Sea, I would not have you touch on the coast of Brasil, unless it be absolutely necessary for you so to do; for they trade

A. D.

1721.

Not to touch  
on the coast  
of Brasil.

over-land to the river of Plate, from whence the Spaniards may have advice of you, on the coast of Chili, before it may happen that you can arrive there with your ship; but if it should happen that you should be so unfortunate as to be obliged to take shelter on that coast, I would recommend the island of St. Catherine's, as the place the most proper in all respects, for your purpose.

The coasts of Brasil, and Patagonia, otherwise called the Defart Coast, are fixed in their most exact situation, by our worthy countryman, Dr. Edmund Halley, whose general sea-chart I strictly observed, and never found any material error in my account, that I could attribute to any error in that gentleman's work, When I was shipwrecked on the island of Juan Fernandes, I, amongst many other things, lost some particular remarks and memorandums, which might have been of use towards the fixing of particular longitudes, which I think may be as well omitted as borrowed.

A. D. I must observe to you, that as you advance

1721. towards the coast of Brasil, you'll see, in the

Sign of being near the coast of Brasil. night, a sort of faint coruscation, flashing and playing, if I may use the expression, in that

part of the horizon. When you begin to observe this, you may assure yourself you are not above twenty-five leagues from the land; thus I found it, and this is the general remark, as I was informed, of all the Portuguese pilots on these coasts, and seas of Brasil.

Necessity  
to get into  
soundings  
South of the  
river of Plate.

Having gained to the Southward of the river of Plate, it may be proper for you to get in with the land till you come into soundings, and in soundings it will be best for you to be, all along the coast of Patagonia. The winds on that coast commonly blowing off the shore, you have nothing, in general, to dread, so that by all means I would have you keep within the limits of my soundings on that coast. Those soundings I have already given in their proper place \*, and by our accounts, compared with Dr. Halley's chart, we were never within thirty, or farther off than forty leagues from land. When you come into the latitude of fifty-one, you may expect to meet with shoal water, on the bank I have formerly mentioned †, therefore then take the most proper measures you can think

of

\* See page 60.

† See page 68.

of, t  
there  
Th  
track  
to go  
lan, o  
shoul  
are bo  
For by  
done,  
the E  
the ex  
they a  
the Ea  
themse  
of so m  
make,  
almost  
quently  
Wester  
Thus t  
than ne  
navigati  
sickness  
people.  
fully av  
the stra  
the latt

of, to keep out of the danger of it, if any there be. A. D. 1721.

The course I took is probably the best track for ships to follow, who have a design to go through either the streights of Magellan, or the streights of le Mair, one of which should, doubtless, be preferred by ships who are bound to the coasts of Chili and Peru. For by keeping to the Eastward, as some have done, who have chosen to go without, or to the Eastward of the island of Staten-land, the extent of which, that way, is uncertain, they are obliged to give it a good berth to the Eastward, and, in so doing, they expose themselves to great difficulties, in the regaining of so much Westing, as is necessary for them, to make, wherewith to double cape Horn, against almost contrary winds, which blow, very frequently, with tempestuous violence, from the Western board, where they are mostly fixed. Thus they expose themselves much longer than necessary, to the shocks of that uncertain navigation, weaken their ships, and introduce sickness, and decay of health, amongst their people. Wherefore let this course be carefully avoided, by making a sure passage thro' the straits of Magellan, or those of le Mair, the latter of which I should, in my own mind,

The best course to be followed for going into the Great South Sea.

A. D. 1721. mind, prefer, for the following reasons. In passing through the straits of Magellan, you run the risque of being frequently obliged to come to an anchor, which must wear out your ground tackling, if you have no losses of it; and harrafs and fatigue your people beyond measure, and risque the danger both of life and limb in so rigid a climate, as this most certainly is; to say nothing of the dangers of shipwreck in so narrow, and, as I may say, so unknown a track of navigation. I

Straits of le  
Mair the best  
passage.

would therefore recommend the straits of le Mair, as a medium between the two extrems of going round to the Eastward of Staten-land, or through the straits of Magellan; tho', I must confess, I thought these the best way when I first set out on this expedition. Through the straits of le Mair you may gain your passage in three hours, and by that means avoid all the fatigues of the one, and cut off the greatest part of the inconveniences of the other. This is the tract the French have generally endeavoured to follow, and which I, from my own experience, who, as far as I have ever read or heard, am the first of our nation, who ever made use of those straits, would recommend to my countrymen, for the time to come.

But

But  
a cau  
ing th  
have  
vance  
sixty  
fathom  
the lan  
ed by  
which  
mistake  
When  
I would  
doublin  
good of  
the coa  
unexpe  
degrees  
imagine  
to the V  
I wo  
with th  
far to th  
in the  
minutes  
stand in  
settled  
will, in

But I must not forget to remind you of a caution you are to make use of in approaching the coasts of Tierra del Fuego, if you have misty weather, and that is, not to advance nearer to the shore than the depth of sixty fathoms, for I found soundings in forty fathoms, within less than eight leagues of the land. Take care that you are not deceived by a distant prospect of the land itself, which being covered with snow, it may be mistaken for white clouds in the horizon. When you have passed the straits of le Mair, I would advise you to contrive, if possible, in doubling cape Horn, to be sure of a very good offing of three days drift, at least, from the coast of Chili; for we made that coast unexpectedly, in the latitude of forty-eight degrees South, when by our accounts we imagined we had been at least fifty leagues to the Westward of it.

I would not have you think of coming in with the coast of Chili, till you have got as far to the Northward as Narborough's island, in the latitude of forty-four degrees, thirty minutes South, nor even then, except you stand in need of wood and water, and have settled fair weather to deal with; for you will, in that part, find a frightful coast, with rapid

A. D.

1721.

Cautions to be used in coming on the coast of Tierra del Fuego.

On the coast of Chili.

But

A. D. rapid tides and breakers, three or four leagues  
1721. from the shore.

Few inha-  
bitants to the  
Southward on  
this coast.

The Spaniards say, the coast of Chili near the sea-side, is uninhabited till you come so far to the Northward as the island of Chiloe, which is a place so abounding with provisions, that even a squadron of ships might there be supplied therewith. The dread of g short of provisions, has been no small discouragement to warlike undertakings in these parts of the world; but I can assure you, there are many places, and may be great opportunities of getting recruits of provision on these coasts, which I do not remember to have seen sufficiently observed in any of our voyages hitherto. Wherefore, for the ease and satisfaction of such as may follow me in that navigation, I shall, as I go along these coasts, take particular notice of such places as may afford provision, and of such means as may be conducive towards attaining it, which may be really serviceable, and help to chase away the melancholy apprehensions of being in danger of starving, or of being forced to surrender for want of a necessary subsistence to keep the sea with.

Coast of  
Chili.

First, then, the coast of Chili extends from cape Victoria, in the Western entrance of the strait

straits of Magellan to Cobija, in the latitude of twenty-two degrees, thirty minutes South. The coast is generally very high, and you have almost all the way a sight of some of the Cordeliers. The sea bordering all along this coast, can, by no means, be termed a part of the Pacific Ocean, especially when the sun is to the Northward of the equator. It is subject to tempestuous weather, very often, in that half of the year. Upon this coast, you have the ports of Conception, in the latitude of thirty-six degrees, forty minutes, South; Valparaíso, in the latitude of thirty-two degrees, fifty-five minutes, South; and Coquimbo in twenty-nine degrees, fifty minutes South. The trade of these ports, which is considerable, consists in the exportation of provisions of all sorts, wherewith they supply the greatest part of the numerous settlements of Peru. You can scarce fail of meeting with provisions, if you cruise in the track of these ports; but if immediate necessity obliges you, or if you are in a condition of not valuing whether the coasts be alarmed, or not, you may take their ships out of the harbour, or make a descent upon the towns, except, perhaps, at Valparaíso, where they have a fortress. The other two have no fort-

A. D.

1721.

Not to be  
termed a part  
of the Pacific  
Ocean, when  
the sun is to  
the northward  
of the equator

- A. D. 1721. tified strength to defend them from the shipping in the road. You may get cattle and some dry provisions likewise, at the island of St. Mary's, which is about nine or ten leagues to the Southward of Conception.

You ought not to think of proceeding to leeward of the island of Juan Fernandez, till you have compleatly stocked yourself with wood and water there\*, which you must husband with care, for there is no certain opportunity of getting any more of either, till you get the length of the island of Gorgona, in the bay of Panama. At the island of Juan Fernandez you may likewise save a good quantity of fish, which you may catch with hooks, though there is no conveniency for hauling the feyne; of these you may salt and save a good stock in a little time. Here you may also save Seal to serve, if not for your own use, yet for your Negroes and Indians, and the like †.

Coast of  
Peru.

We now come to the coast of Peru, which in the common acceptation, in respect of these

seas

\* The caution given here is of no use, if it be true, as is reported, that the Spaniards have peopled and fortified the island of Juan Fernandez, and your wood and water must be sought for somewhere else to the Southward.

† All these conveniences and advantages can no longer exist, if the island of Juan Fernandez be really peopled, as is said above.

seas  
two  
a fe  
tude  
bija  
five  
and  
mou  
of bu  
were  
the t  
this p  
justly  
equal  
in any  
niards  
firm  
ther w  
rate h  
der an  
tent o  
and p  
The  
may b  
except  
breezes  
a little  
coast,



A. D.

1721.

seas, extends from Cobija, in the latitude of twenty-two deg. thirty min. South, to within a few degrees of the city of Panama, in the latitude of eight deg. five min. North. From Cobija to Tumbez, in the latitude of four degrees, five minutes, South, which is four hundred and eighty leagues, this coast is extremely mountainous, barren, and sandy. I had sight of but two green spots in all this extent, which were the vale of Arica, and the land about the town of Pisco. Within the limits of this part of the coast, the navigation may be justly termed Pacific, for it enjoys a certain equality of weather, which I never heard of, in any other part of the world; and the Spaniards, from their long experience there, affirm that it is *never* subject to storms of either wind or rain, no more than to immoderate heats, or the terrors and alarms of thunder and lightning, so truly may *this* vast extent of sea and sea-coast, be said to be safe and pacific !

Pacific Sea

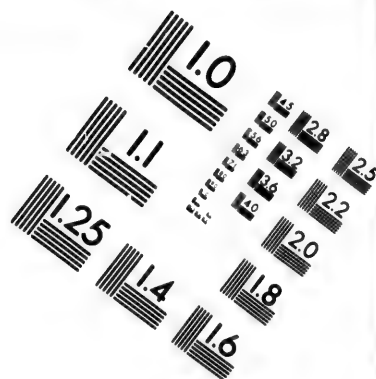
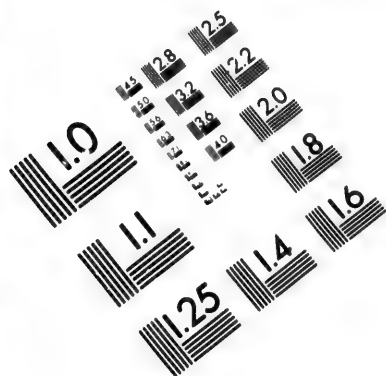
Winds

The winds through all this extent of coast, may be said to be always Southwesterly, except that, in the night, you have regular breezes off shore, in with the land; though a little in the offing, the trade wind of the coast, as we may call it, prevails briskly.

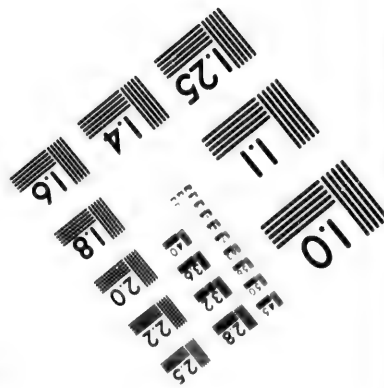
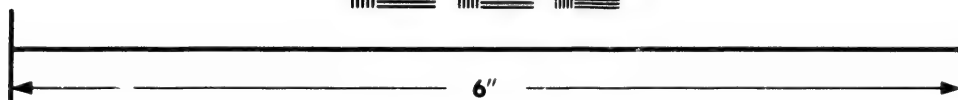
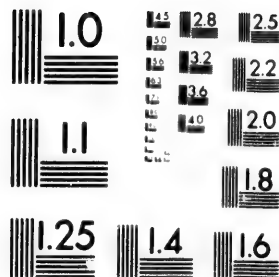
F f 2

On





# IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation

33 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

18 20 22 25  
28 30 32 35

10

A. D.

1721.

Places which  
afford Provisi-  
ons on the  
coast of Peru.

On the contrary, that part of the coast of Peru, lying between Tumbez and Panama, is subject to violent squalls and gusts of wind, thunder and lightning, and great rains, especially when the sun is near the equator. All this coast is bold, and free from any hidden danger, until you come near to the bay of Panama, and there is no difficulty even there, in going as far as Gorgona, if you keep your lead going. One thing very remarkable, is, that there is but one navigable river, that we are aware of, on all the coasts of Chili and Peru, which is the river of Guayaquil.

If on this coast you should want provision, you can't well miss of finding enough (for a single ship, at least) on the island of Iquique; for they having there, nothing of their own growth, the few inhabitants are obliged to keep a stock before-hand. For the same reason you may meet with it at Payta, if they have not a previous alarm. From le Nasco and Pisco they export great quantities of wine and brandy. Off of the high land of le Nasco, is a good cruising station, for meeting with the Chilianian traders, who commonly fall in with the land hereabouts. From the road of Guanchaco which is the port for Truxillo, they likewise export great quantities

A. D.

1721.

Places frequented by the French.

ties of wheat, flour, bread, wine, brandy, sweetmeats and fruits, plate, and the like.

These ships generally trade to Panama; the same trade is carried on from Guayaquil to

the same place. Cobija and Hilo have been

lately the refuge of the French ships; they

are both open roads. Here they dispose of

their cargoes, and in the first of these, Mar-

tinet in the Gloucester, and la Jonquiere in

the Ruby, two Spanish men of war, took se-

ven or eight French ships in one morning,

without firing a gun; if I say they were

Coast of Mexico.

worth one million sterling, it will not be near

so much as they valued themselves at, as I

was informed.

We now come to the coast of Mexico, a part of the world less frequented than the former two, and of consequence less known. I can say nothing farther of the extent of this coast, than from near Panama to cape Corientes, in the latitude of about twenty-one degrees North, lying nearest North West, and by West, and South East and by East. The situation of it, its little commerce, the uncertainty of its winds and weather, together with its unaccountable currents, and frequent long calms, render it a tedious solitary navigation.

*A VOYAGE round the WORLD.*

This coast appears to be a vast continued mountainous wilderness. Most of the largest and highest peaks or mountains are, by the Spaniards, call'd Volcano's, but hardly any of them burn now. I saw but one of them that burn'd, which was that of Rumbao, in the latitude of fourteen degrees, twenty minutes, North, from whence we heard both the times we pass'd by it, a rumbling noise as of remote thunder; this noise we did not hear twice or thrice only, but once every eight or ten minutes.

From Rio Lego to Acapulco we used every night to see the shore illuminated, as it were, by a great many fires, the reason or use of which we never could learn.

From Rio Lego to the bay of Tegoantepeque, or la Ventosa, the land next the sea is low, and full of Mangroves, though a little behind, and up in the country, you discover ridges of mountains of a great height. All the way

Fresh water  
ter hard to  
come at on  
this coast.

that we ply'd up this coast, we had gradual soundings close home to the shore. The sea falls very heavy upon this coast, insomuch, that we could not find a place to put a boat on shore, with safety, from Acapulco to the gulph of Amapala, where the Success water'd but where we, as I have already related, could find

find none after the most diligent searches we could make for it. This therefore is a place not to be much depended upon; so that there is no certainty of getting any supply of fresh water, in this part, from the Island of Cano to Puerto Seguro in California. I never heard of any navigable river on this coast, though perhaps there may be many such amongst the deep Gulphs and Bays on this coast, which are but little known, even to the Spaniards themselves.

A. D.

1721.

Trade of  
this coast.

The chief trade of Mexico lies on the Eastern side of it, which makes the navigation on this part inconsiderable, and therefore it is not much worth the while to cruise here, except you are strong enough to cope with the Manila ship. When the same ship is in Acapulco you will also be in the way of such ships, from Peru, who come thither, at that season, with silver to purchase Indian and Chinese Commodities.

Difficult to  
get out of the  
bay of Panama.

If you leave the coast of Peru to cruise on the coast of Mexico, be sure to compleat your stock of wood and water at Quibo, rather than run so deep into the bay of Panama, as the Island of Gorgona; for I met with a great deal of trouble in getting out from thence again. And if the coasts should happen to be



A. D.

1721.

alarm'd, the enemy's men of war never fail to search for you at that place. Besides at *Qui-bo* you may not only find wood and water but also, as I have already observ'd, meet with provisions, by looking out for the small vessels which pass through Canal Bueno from Cheri-qui, Puebla-Nuova, and other places to Panama, and also by landing at Mariato, as I have before directed, where you will find sufficient of many things, especially of live cattle. I must observe to you, that as I went to Mariato in a Spanish-built ship, I did not alarm them, although they saw me come to an anchor in the evening; but it might require you to make use of all imaginable precaution, to go thither in one of our Europe-built ships, which the Indians would soon distinguish from one of theirs; but if you should have any ship of the Spanish-built in your possession, you may send her in, as I have already directed, and keep out with your own ship. As a mark to know this place by, remember you will see the clear green spot, I have already observed, and the two farm-houses. You may land on the beach over-against the houses, and save yourself the trouble of going round by the river of St. Martin, as I did. So contrive it, as to get some of the inhabitants into your hands.

They

They  
them  
but a  
being  
are no  
distan  
which  
city of  
hundr  
may v  
all you  
they c  
my inf  
a num  
take y  
before  
you, i  
places  
with a  
thods  
or pe  
world  
tion,  
that of  
quility  
vantag  
mends  
going

A. D.

1721.

They will be very useful to you, and without them you can do but little good. If you land but a small number of men you need not fear being attacked within thirty hours; for there are no Spaniards who live nearer than at the distance of seventeen or eighteen leagues, which is the distance of what they call the city of Santa Maria. But if you can land a hundred and fifty or two hundred men, you may venture to keep your ground, and save all your cattle on shore; for all the strength they can muster up, according to the best of my information, will not be able to drive such a number of you from thence, and you may take your own time. This, with what I said before, will be a sufficient instruction for you, in relation to this, or any of the other places I have mentioned, and I shall conclude with assuring my reader, that if proper methods were taken in the conduct of warlike or peaceable enterprizes to this part of the world, there is not a more agreeable navigation, than that of these coasts in general, but that of Peru in particular, whose natural tranquillity, and the great prospects of reaping advantage there, would, if possible, make amends for all the troubles to be undergone in going thither, and in coming from thence.

S E C T.

A. D.

1721.



## S E C T. XVI.

*Transactions in our passage between  
Puerto Seguro in California, and  
the river of Canton in China.*

THOUGH I could not but be  
T pleased with the thoughts that I had,  
at Puerto Seguro, supplied myself  
with a stock of wood and water in a few days,  
which, without the assistance of the inhabi-  
tants, might have taken us up a month or  
two; yet when I reflected on my voyage hi-  
ther, and to the Tres Marias, in quest of the  
Success, and how much it had impaired my  
ship, and rendered her less in a condition to  
perform the vast course we had to run, to  
reach the other side of the world, I could not  
but regret the disappointment, and be alarm-  
ed at our situation. Our ship was well worn  
out, and our rigging and sails were in the  
most wretched plight, that could be thought  
of, for service. The least accident, in the midst  
of this voyage, to either, might have put a stop

to

to it fo  
lected

I coul

Fri

menti

the fa

cape

three

Canto

we co

home

Au

island

and te

I ende

approa

two le

blowin

lose fo

ty lay

I judg

cumfe

appea

middl

my na

ally in

but ha

days,

to it for ever. On the other hand, when I recol-  
lected I had done what I thought for the best,  
I could not but have some satisfaction in it.

A. D.

1721.

Friday, August the eighteenth, as before-  
mentioned, I sailed from Puerto Seguro, and  
the same evening we took our departure from  
cape St. Lucar, in the latitude of twenty-  
three degrees, fifty minutes North, bound to  
Canton in China, the most likely place where  
we could hope to meet with English ships  
homeward bound for Europe.

Departure  
from Califor-  
nia.

August the twenty-first, we discovered an  
island bearing West South West, a hundred  
and ten leagues distant from cape St. Lucar ;  
I endeavoured to get in with it, but could not  
approach it nearer than within the distance of  
two leagues. The night coming on, and it  
blowing very fresh, I did not think it proper to  
lose so much way as we might, in the night,  
by laying by, or by plying in to take a view of it.  
I judged it to be seven or eight leagues in cir-  
cumference. On the South West of it, there  
appeared a large bay, with a high rock in the  
middle of it ; this isle my people called after  
my name. From hence we steered down gradu-  
ally into the parallel of thirteen degrees North,  
but had our way stopped, for two or three  
days, by Westerly winds, which is what we  
never

Discover an  
island.

Meet with  
contrary  
winds.

A. D. never expected to meet with in such latitudes, and at a distance of some hundreds of leagues from any land. We were astonished at such an unforeseen delay, and began to dread we might meet with many such reverses of winds in this passage; nor could we conjecture, or conceive what might be the cause or causes of them. In the midst of this, the usual trade wind prevailed again, and delivered us from the fears and apprehensions, we had been involved in, upon this occasion. With this we proceeded on our passage, keeping the parallel or track of the thirteenth degree of Northern latitude, except when we judged ourselves to be near the shoals of St. Bartholomew. We then ventured to sail a degree more Northerly, and so continued to do for a run of sixty or seventy leagues.

People  
taken with a  
sickness.

A fortnight, or thereabouts, after we had left California, my people, who had hitherto enjoyed an uninterrupted state of health, began to be afflicted with a sickness which particularly affected their stomachs. This we took to be owing, in the greatest measure, to the quantities of sweetmeats they were continually devouring, and also to our common food, which was puddings made of very coarse flour and sweetmeats, and with salt water instead

stead  
with  
ants,  
food.  
the ke  
this w  
and o  
melan  
no m  
alread  
well,  
sickne  
that,  
ried t  
plesto  
of su  
nande  
lost th  
togeth  
had t  
pect l  
speed  
dread  
peopl  
and m  
add st  
time,  
split,

stead of fresh to moisten them. This, together with dried beef which was partly devoured by ants, cockroaches, and other vermin was their food. We could not afford fresh water to boil the kettle with, once in the whole passage, and this way of living naturally brought the Scurvy, and other distempers upon us. This was a melancholy condition to be in, for us who had no medicines for the relief of those who were already sick, or to prevent those who were well, from falling into the same state. This sickness increased upon us every day, insomuch that, out of our small number, we once buried two in one day, which were John Popplestone, our ingenious armourer, who was of such use to us on the island of Juan Fernandez, and the carpenter's mate. We also lost the carpenter, gunner, and several others, together with some of our best negroes, nor had those who survived any great reason to expect but that they should follow them very speedily. We now laboured under the most dreadful distresses. The greatest part of my people were, by this time, sick and disabled, and my ship began to be very leaky; and to add still to our misfortunes, we had, just at this time, the ill luck to have one of our pumps split, and rendered useless.

Under

A. D.

1721.

Push on our  
course for  
Guam.

Under these disastrous circumstances, were we pushed forward by favourable gales, till we came within eighty leagues of Guam, one of the Ladron islands. Here we met with black and dismal weather, with tempestuous winds, flying and varying all round the compass. This was the more frightful to us, by as much as we were in no condition to help ourselves. We were not above six or seven that were able to do any work, though necessity now obliged even those, who were very much out of order, to lend what helping hand they could. These boisterous gales had raised such a tumbling sea, and our ship laboured so much in it, that the knee of her head, and the whole beak-head became loose, so that the bowsprit fetched way, and played with the motion of the ship, which it continued to do all the time we were out at sea, and till we arrived at Canton. Our main-mast stood for some time without shrouds on the larboard side, till we could unlay our best cable to make more, having knotted and spliced the old shrouds till our labour was in vain. In Peru, where our ship was built and rigged, they seem to have but little regard to the support of their masts, to which their stays and shrouds hold no proportion, and had not our masts, at  
this

this time  
nothing  
us from  
In the  
I myself  
hope to  
some n  
very th  
such a  
as a d  
nor any  
up in  
reduce  
feared  
In the  
in about  
one the  
we made  
dred le  
who m  
degrees  
and cap  
it quite  
tween t  
Serpan  
none o  
had hea  
me to

this time, been extremely strong and substantial, nothing but a miracle could have preserved us from here ending our days at sea.

A. D.

1721.

In the midst of all this sickness and distress I myself was taken violently ill, and had no hope to recover till a fit of the gout gave me some room for it. Great was our want of every thing fit, or comfortable for persons in such a state of sickness. We had not so much as a drop of wine, or any liquor but water, nor any sort or kind of sustenance to keep us up in any degree of spirits, so that we became reduced to such faintings, as were sometimes feared to be irrecoverable.

Myself taken with a dangerous sickness.

In the midst of this forlorn condition, and in about the beginning of the month of october, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-one, we made the island of Guam. We were a hundred leagues short of Capt. Rogers's account, who makes the run of one hundred and five degrees difference of longitude, between this and cape St. Lucar, while we did not make it quite a hundred degrees. We passed between the foremention'd Island of Guam and Serpana, and saw several flying prows, but none of them came near us. That day we had heavy and squally weather, which obliged me to keep the deck, where, in the rain, I caught

Come in sight of the Ladron islands.



A. D. 1721. caught a cold, which threw me into a worse condition than I had ever been in before, and in which I continued all the time I was in China. The Island of Guam appears to be covered with verdure, and is of a moderate height. The prospect of land was very agreeable to us, after a run of such a length. We could, with the greatest pleasure, have stopped to purchase some refreshment of fruits, such as Lemons, Seville Oranges, and the like, which would have been very good for such of us as had the Scurvey. But though we were upon the very brink of perishing, we dar'd not venture to put into any part of the Island, for fear the Inhabitants should take the advantage of our weakness and make some attempt upon us. The night after we had seen the Island of Guam, we had our maintopsail split, which, as it happen'd, prov'd no loss of way to us; for, during several days, after this accident, we had such tempestuous weather, that we could bear no more than our lower canvas, which so strained and tryed the strength of our ship, that now her main beam work<sup>d</sup> and plaid at every heave and heel she gave.

Meet with stormy weather.

Direct our course for the island of Formosa.

From Guam I directed my course for the Island of Formosa, and now though the length of

of o  
fickn  
muc  
may  
were  
had  
fage  
fomu  
befor  
fore v  
had f  
ma, l  
ward  
and,  
appea  
next  
and p  
le Re  
fible  
Form  
fed by  
to tak  
ny vis  
Fro  
Blanc  
vembe  
with t  
coast,

of our voyage was decreasing very fast, our sickness was daily increasing upon us in a much greater proportion, and most truly it may be said, that both our ship and ourselves were no longer fit for the sea. Nevertheless we had the disadvantage to have a very long passage from the Ladron Islands to Formosa, in-  
somuch that it was the third of November before we had any sight of that island. Just before we discovered the island of Formosa, we had sight of the isle of Bottal Tobacco Xima, lying about nine leagues to the Northeastward of the Southermost cape of Formosa, and, as the sun set, we saw Formosa itself, appearing, to us, to be very high land. The next day we rounded the Southern cape of it, and pass'd within a league of the rocks of Vele Rete, and by them we were made sensible of a very strong tide or current. The Formosians made several fires, for us, as we pass'd by them, but we were not in a condition to take any notice of them, or to pay them any visit.

From hence I directed our course for Pedro Blanco, on the coast of China. But on November the sixth, at day break, we fell in with the mouth of the river of Loma on that coast, in twelve fathom water. We saw great

A. D.

1721.

Make the  
island of For-  
mosa.

Arrival on  
the coast of  
China.

G g

numbers

A. D.  
1721.

numbers of fishing boats coming out of that river, and from the adjacent parts ; but it proving very hazy, we could not make the land plain enough to discover whereabouts we were. Wherefore our endeavour was to entice some of the fishermen on board of us, to pilot us to Macao ; but for want of being able to make ourselves understood, our endeavours to this purpose, were to no effect. We were under a necessity to keep the land close aboard, and for want of a pilot to come to an anchor every evening. This was a great fatigue to my ships company, who were so universally down with the distemper reigning among us, and which had now so gathered upon us, that it was as much as we could do, to find any body to steer the ship. We were four days in a mist, and bewildred in a maze of channels, between islands, our charts took no notice of. We were surprized at this, and observing, now and then, some fortifications on some of these islands, we feared, the current had carried us to the southward of our port, and began to be greatly cast down ; for though the sea was cover'd with fishing barks, we could not find one of them that could, or would set us right, or give us any sort of directions we could at all understand.

At

the  
nar  
a fi  
by  
wer  
nel,  
to, t  
don  
that  
of  
sign  
if w  
ver a  
whic  
coun  
ded  
came  
and  
bove  
an ar  
weig  
Chin  
us ab  
could  
they  
way  
took

At length on November the tenth, towards the evening, as we were passing through a very narrow channel, between a couple of islands, a fisherman took notice of us. He observed by our cautious manner of working, that we were half afraid to venture through this channel, and made signs to us to bring our ship to, till he came up with us. When he had so done, he seem'd to understand in general, that we enquired of him about the situation of Macao, and therefore made signs to us, signifying that he would conduct us thither, if we would give him as many pieces of silver as he counted little fish out of his basket, which amounted to forty. We accordingly counted out forty dollars into a hat, and handed them down to him. Upon which he came up into the ship, and took us in charge, and carried us through the narrow channel abovementioned, and, at sun set, brought us to an anchor not far off. The next morning we weigh'd again, and kept the main land of China close on board, and at noon he brought us abreast of Pulo Lantoon, from whence we could perceive two English ships under sail, as they passed by the island of Macao, in their way from the river of Canton homewards, they took no notice of us, and kept on their way.

Pulo Lantoon

A. D. 1721. This, tho' a pleasing sight after all we had gone through, was, at the same time, what could not but make us uneasy, fearing we might lose a passage for England this season, for want of a ship to convey us thither.

Arrival in  
the road of  
Macao.

November the eleventh, in the afternoon we anchor'd in the road of Macao, a Portuguese settlement near the entrance of the river of Canton, which we certainly never should have found out, by any thing we could learn from any of our charts. I much admire at the incorrectness of our sea charts, in respect of these coasts to the Eastward of Pulo Lantoon; for there runs a cluster of islands extending themselves upwards of twenty leagues, by our account, which are not in the least taken notice of, by any of our geographers that I know of, nor did I ever meet with any seamen, that knew any thing of them. That part of the coast of China which is covered by these islands is rocky, mountainous, and barren to look at; but as to the particular situation of these isles, my sickness, and our great distress, deprived us of the pleasure of making such observations concerning them, as might otherwise have occurred to us.

Macao being a place where ships always stop for a Pilot, to carry them up the river of Canton;

Canton; I sent an officer on shore with a compliment to the Governor, and with orders to bring off a pilot with him. But I heard nothing of him till the next morning, which gave me many anxious apprehensions. Early the next day there came off to us, a great many of the *Succes's* people from Macao, to make us a visit; I was amazed at the sight of them, and was, at first, very glad to see them, but my mind chang'd a little when I heard their story, wherein they acquainted me, that their commander Clipperton had left me designedly, as I have before related, and that they went directly to Guam, one of the Ladrone islands, where they were very well refresh'd, and supply'd with provisions. That their captain there sold the Governor a great quantity of powder and shot, and several other valuable things, and permitted the Marquis of Villa Rocha, who was his prisoner, to go on shore with Mr. Godfrey, the agent, and a marine officer, who went to settle the accounts, for what supplies of things they had had. That as soon as they were landed and the boat come off again, Captain Clipperton, weigh'd with his ship in order to attack a ship of twenty guns from Manila, who had lain quietly in the road in company with him

A. D.  
1721.

Some of Clipperton's people who were at Macao, come on board of us.

Clipperton's behaviour at the island of Guam.

A. D. all the time till now. That in approaching  
 1721. her he ran his own ship upon the rocks, and  
 soon found the enemy was prepared for him.  
 I am almost ashamed to relate what was this  
 man's behaviour in this skirmish; but as I  
 think he deserves to be exposed, I shall di-  
 vulge it in the manner I receiv'd it from his  
 chief officers, who talk'd of it publickly at  
 Canton. Clipperton perceiving his case def-  
 erate, and the loss of his ship to all appear-  
 ance past redemption, had recourse to his case  
 of brandy, for a supply of spirits to help him  
 to make a vigorous defence with; but he took  
 so abundantly of it as to be quite overcome by  
 it, and, unable to help himself, fell on the deck,  
 and snor'd out his time in a beastly manner,  
 whilst his first lieutenant Davidson in his stead,  
 undertook the command of the ship, which he  
 bravely executed till he was kill'd: he was  
 succeeded by captain Cook, their second lieu-  
 tenant, who made a handsom resistance, and  
 got the ship afloat again, after she had lain on  
 the rocks forty-eight hours, during all which  
 time Clipperton had been lost between sleeping  
 and drinking alternately, so that he did not re-  
 cover himself till they were out at sea again,  
 and then by his impertinent questions, and id-  
 dle behaviour, sufficiently convinced them he  
 had

Misbehavi-  
 our of Clip-  
 perton.

had  
 thei  
 whi  
 they  
 cha,  
 ral,  
 gave  
 Clip  
 have  
 lock  
 Cool  
 T  
 betw  
 ther  
 mad  
 the  
 ship'  
 strait  
 had  
 no fa  
 Chri  
 gove  
 seem  
 then  
 coul  
 form  
 on, a  
 ing l

A. D.

1721.

had known nothing of what had pass'd during their engagement, and defence of themselves, which lasted two days, and two nights. Thus they lost their prisoner the marquis de la Rocha, and also Mr. Godfrey, the agent-general, with one of their marine officers; which gave the ships company, such a distaste of Clipperton, that they would not suffer him to have the command of them any more, and, locking him up in his cabin, entreated captain Cook to take the charge of them.

They endured it seems much bad weather between Guam and Amoy in China, whether they got with much difficulty; and there made a dividend of all they had taken, half to the owners, or adventurers, and half to the ship's company. Clipperton design'd for the straits of Malacca, but his people fearing he had no good intentions in his head, would go no farther with him than Macao, that being a Christian port. Upon their arrival there, the governour order'd Clipperton into custody. It seems he had broke prison formerly from thence, where he had been confin'd (as far as could be learn'd) on account of his having formerly run away with Dampier's Commission, and one of his prizes; but upon producing his Majesty's Commission now for the



- A. D. 1721. Success, they gave him no farther trouble, and only contented themselves with fleecing him a little. They told me, the Gentlemen-adventurers in England were much obliged to the Governour of this place, who being inform'd that Clipperton could not be prevail'd on to remit their effects home in the English ships lying at Canton, obliged him to send what belong'd to them, in a Portugeze ship, which was ready to depart for Lisbon. Here he sold his ship the Success for about one thousand pounds sterling. I thought it proper to make this digression for the information of the gentlemen-adventurers, since it is certain that he will never, either privately or publicly, let them into the truth of his story.

A Chinese  
pilot takes us  
in charge.

*Harbour*  
^

But to go on with that which concerns myself, on November the twelfth, about noon, a pilot came off to us, and we immediately weigh'd, and enter'd the river of Canton, being assur'd there still remain'd some European ships at Wampo, which is the name of the place where our ships lie in this river, at the distance of about ten miles short of the city of Canton. We were four days plying up to the road between the two lower bars, where finding

A. D.

1721.

finding the Bonita and Hastings, two English Indian traders or country ships, I anchor'd, and sent off an officer, to desire them to instruct us how to behave ourselves in this port, and to acquaint me with the customs of it. To this they answer'd, that since the Cadogan and Frances, two European English ships were lying at Wampo, they would advise me to send up to their factories at Canton, to acquaint them of our arrival, and with the reasons which obliged me to come into that river; which I accordingly did the next day, and borrow'd one of their flags to hoist in our boat, as without this precaution, we should have met with great trouble from the Hoppo men, or custom house officers. I sent by my officer letters to the captains of the English ships, signifying the necessity which had driven me to take shelter in these parts, and desir'd they would, as far as in them lay, make the port safe and useful to us, assuring them that I acted by virtue of his Majesty's Commission, which I also sent to them, that they might peruse it.

My boat being thus dispatch'd before me, I weigh'd the next morning, and work'd up to Wampo, where I found, besides two English ships, three French ones, viz. the Ga-

Arrival at  
Wampo in  
the river Can-  
ton.

latea

A. D. latea, the prince of Conti, and the Maur and  
 1721. also one Ostender, and a small ship from Mani-  
 la. I now thought I was going to rest a lit-  
 tle from my labours, not expecting but that  
 I should find such treatment, at least from my  
 own countrymen, as consisted with humani-  
 ty and common civility, and with that sort of  
 regard which is thought to be due to people in  
 distress; but, to my misfortune, I suffered as  
 much here, all circumstances considered, as  
 I had in any former part of my voyage.



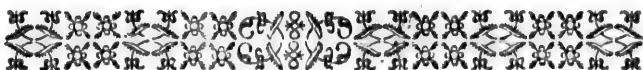
S E C T.



Arr



terwa  
 Engli  
 being  
 the B  
 Georg  
 was,  
 Hopp  
 to sea  
 and f  
 he ha  
 suers,  
 house  
 corpse  
 Engli  
 nese  
 waite



## S E C T. XVII.

*Arrival in the river of. Canton, and transactions there.*

THE same evening that we anchored  
 T at Wampo, there happened an accident which gave much trouble afterwards to myself, as well as to others of the English gentlemen here; for one of my men being in a hurry to remove his effects on board the Bonita, in order to go in her to Fort St. George, the Bonita's boat, in which he was, was, in her way to their ship, pursued by a Hoppo or custom-house boat, who wanted to search her. The fellow being in liquor, and fearing they would take away the silver he had with him, fired a musquet at the pursuers, and killed a Hoppo-man, or custom-house officer. Early the next morning, the corpse was laid at the door of one of the English houses or factories, where Chinese officers, appointed for that purpose, waited for the first considerable Englishman, that

A custom  
 officer killed  
 by one of my  
 men.

A. D.

1721.

that should come out, or make his appearance, without any regard had to whom in particular this act of violence and murder was to be imputed. It happened that one Mr. C-----k, a super-cargoe belonging to the Bonita, was one of the first that came out, and they immediately seized on him after their manner, and carried him away, and afterwards led him about the suburbs of Canton, in chains. All that could be said or done by the most considerable of the Chinese merchants, who were in commerce with the English, availed nothing. In the mean time my man David Griffith, who had committed the fact, and another, were clapped into irons, on board the Frances, who was chopped, that is, seized, till the man who was guilty of the crime was delivered to them, and accordingly he was put into their hands, and carried to Canton in chains, and Mr. C-----k was soon after released.

Ships measured at Canton.

It is the custom in China, at least at Canton, to exact a certain sum of money from all ships that come there, according to their measurement, which is divided into rates or portions of first, second and third. I therefore every day expected the Hoppo to come to measure my ship, but was given to understand,

stand  
could  
my  
days  
time  
made  
was,  
prete  
killed  
any b  
ter th  
I was  
to be  
afterv  
retinu  
quiet  
was t  
me m  
Chine  
riches  
of m  
I h  
was c  
comp  
remov  
ship,  
my k  
fined

stand, that I must go up to Canton before that  
could be done, though even at the hazard of  
my life. I accordingly went, and staid two  
days at the Cadogan's factory, during which  
time I was hourly alarmed by such stories as  
made me fear that I should, indisposed as I  
was, be dragged away from my bed, on the  
pretence, that it was one of my men who had  
killed the custom-house officer, though I, nor  
any belonging to me, knew more of the mat-  
ter than by hearsay. At the end of two days,  
I was obliged to go down again to the ship,  
to be present at the measurement, and a day  
afterwards the Hoppo came with a numerous  
retinue, and seemed to do his business very  
quietly, but would not let me know what  
was the sum he intended to exact. This gave  
me much trouble, for I began to think the  
Chinefe, through a false report of our great  
riches, had an intention to gratify their love  
of money upon us at any rate.

I had not been here many days, before I  
was deserted by all my officers and ship's  
company, who were continually employed in  
removing their effects from on board of my  
ship, to some of the European, contrary to  
my knowledge, as I was all the time con-  
fined to my bed. My officers were engaging  
the

A. D.

1721.

A great ex-  
action.

A. D.

1721.

Our ship  
deserted.

the India gentlemen in their interest, and had left me and my son, with a few negroes, to look after the ship, and defend my effects, which I thought on the brink of falling into the pit of the Chinese avarice. In short, my ship's company had so many ways of disposing of their effects, that it was impossible to oblige them to do what I should have thought justice to the gentlemen in England, and to myself. In a word, they were all soon recovered of their illness, by the assistance they met with here, and were become their own masters. There was no magistrate, to appeal to on the shore, who would have done me so much service as to have obliged them to keep to their own ship; and my brother officers, commanding the English ships, could not, through fear of a misrepresentation of their conduct to the India company, by their supercargoes, or others, afford me such help, as, perhaps, they would have been inclined to, through a sense of their duty in complying with the tenor of my commission. The gentlemen who presided over the trade, so little considered our case, that they had half a mind to refuse me a passage in one of their ships, and, in effect, I was treated by them almost as one enemy might treat another, in a  
neutral

neutral port, for as such they may have looked upon me for offering to come into the company's limits, without allowing for the necessities which forced me into them. The captains Hill and Newsham, when they first came to see me, were astonished at the ruinous appearance of my ship, and could scarce think it was possible she should have undertaken so long a stretch, as from California hither. The rottenness of our cordage, and the raggedness of our sails, the bad state of the ship, and sickness of my ship's company, filled them, at first, with astonishment and pity of our condition; insomuch, that at their first visit, when I had given them a short history of my voyage, and of the difficulties and hazards I had struggled with and gone through to obtain a passage, and desired they would receive me, my officers, and ship's company, on board them, with their effects, and that as soon as might be, and with as little loss of time; they answer'd, that since they plainly saw my ship was in no condition to stir any farther, upon paying for our passage, they would entertain us as soon as we pleased. This I depended upon, and expected to have no farther trouble than to remove ourselves at any time; but, on the contrary, I found that I had ignorantly



A. D.  
1721.

rantly apply'd to the wrong persons, and that my address should have been to the supercargoes, by which means I was left neglected, while the English captains were order'd to fall down with their ships five or six miles below us. Thus was I left destitute in the company of five foreign ships, who perceiving my own countrymen to be so careless of me, were so kind, as to offer me their service and assisted me with what they could, and had it not been for them, I don't know what I might have suffer'd, for I was under perpetual alarms that the Chinese had a design to chop my ship, that is, seize her.

An act of  
violence on  
the Europeans  
at Canton.

Soon after, the murder of the custom-house officer seem'd to be accommodated, by having the criminal in their own possession, and by the revenge the Chinese thought fit to take on others. When every thing relating to that fact was hush'd, there was an outrageous action committed by what they call an inferiour Mandarin, who (it seems) at the beginning of these troubles, had orders given him to take up all the English he should meet with, which duty he neglected till all was well over. This man or magistrate whatever he was, passing by the European factories, order'd his attendants to seize on all the English they saw in  
the

A. D.

1721.

the shops thereabouts, and accordingly they seized on nine or ten, as well French as English, and carry'd them away with halters about their necks, to the Vice-Roy's. Upon this there was application made to the Hoppo, who so represented matters to the Vice-Roy in favour of the injured Europeans, that the Mandarin, who was guilty of this violence, was sent for ; and being unable to vindicate himself, was, as we heard the story, immediately degraded from his post, and stripp'd of the ensigns of his office, and (as they farther told us) bamboo'd, and render'd for ever incapable of acting again, and the Europeans were directly discharged.

However, in the main, the English seem to be tyrannised over by the Chinese, and exposed to the caprices of every magistrate, which made me the more urgent to be on board one of the European ships; having good reason to fear, by reports, and their actual ill-treatment of the English in general, that I, and my effects might fall a sacrifice to their immoderate love of money, and especially as opportunities could not be wanting to them, who, in the night, might strip my abandon'd ship, in which scarce any body but myself, (who could not stir out of my bed,) and my

H h

son

A. D. 1721. son took up a lodging. I had by this time, as I thought, found out my error, in having apply'd to the captains, and not to the super-cargoes, and by that means suggested to them an unreasonable cause to use me in a careless manner. I therefore sent up a letter to them, not to desire, but to demand a passage for me, my officers, and ship's company, which I was sensible they could not refuse, and indeed they did not: but their condescension was accompanied with a charge to the English captains, not to receive any thing belonging to us, except it was consign'd to the India company in England. This was an article which might as well have been kept in silence as declar'd; for it so far enrag'd my people, that they vow'd they would as soon throw what they had into the sea, as comply with such a demand; for my part, it gave me no concern. I was conscious to myself, and their officers, both of the trade and navigation, were fully convinc'd of it, that it was a thing impossible for me to have converted any of my silver into the commodities of the country, which I hop'd they would represent, to the East-India company, in such a light as to leave them no room to detain what I should consign to them, on pretence of having infring'd their privileges

A. D.

1721.

leges. At the same time that I was acquainted with this intention of receiving us as passengers, I was also inform'd of the Hoppo's demand for anchorage in the river. I had been long in suspense upon that head, and all along apprehended I should have some unusual exaction imposed upon me, and indeed so it happen'd; for they demanded no less than six thousand Tahel; and to quicken me in the payment of this exorbitant sum, and to shew me they were in good earnest, there was a penalty annex'd to this extortion of five hundred additional Tahel for every day we failed in the payment of it. In short, there was no means by which I could evade this unconscionable imposition; in vain had I shewn the Hoppo my commission, which as I apprehended, was also read in the Chinese tongue to him, and to as little purpose did I also remonstrate to him, that I came with no other design than to obtain a passage home in one of our country ships, my own being incapable of going farther. Right or wrong, was now out of the question, and as it was a day before I could possibly send the six thousand Tahel up to Canton, they requir'd five hundred Tahel more for neglect of payment; so that they received from me upon this extraordinary occasion, the full sum

A. D.  
1721.

of fix thousand five hundred Tahel, which is two thousand one hundred and fixty six pounds thirteen shillings and four pence sterling. This was, as is apprehended, about six times as much as the Cadogan paid, who was the largest English ship there, and measured a third more than mine. What still added weight to this imposition was that instead of receiving the benefits of the port, I had been every way abused in it. It was now high time to get out of my ship; but before I quitted her, I sold her for two thousand Tahel, which money, and the rest of my effects were consigned to the India company, and by degrees I prevailed with most of my officers, and ships company, to take their passage in the English homeward bound ships.

It would be needless to observe that the English have no settled factory at Canton, and are only permitted to hire large Honges, or Houses, near the water side, conveniently accommodated with warehouses for the reception of goods and merchandize, for which they pay a rent, and quit when the season comes for their return again to Europe.

S E C T.



## S E C T. XVIII.

*Containing an Account of our Passage  
from China to England in the Ca-  
dogan East-India-Man Commanded  
by Captain John Hill.*

 T was not in our power to give any description worth the while of the City of Canton, its river or the country about it, any more than of what might be said and observ'd of its inhabitants.

All that I propose to myself for the remainder, is to conduct my reader home, after having led him round so large a portion of the earth's circumference, through so many different climates, and a series of such unfortunate occurrences.

Towards the latter end of December, I <sup>Departure</sup> fail'd in the Cadogan, commanded by captain <sup>from Canton</sup> John Hill, in company with the Frances, <sup>in China.</sup> captain Newsham, who sailing better than we, left us as soon as we were out to sea.

H h 3

Captain

A. D.

1721.

Put into  
Batavia.

Captain Hill finding his ship very tender, put into Batavia, where we continued about ten days, but I can give no particular description of this place, I being at that time, not able to stand on my legs. I was carried abroad but twice, to take an airing two or three miles out of the city, in which little tour we had a great variety of very beautiful prospects of country seats and gardens, and indeed every thing round us made a shew of the greatest industry. As to the city itself, the buildings are in general very handsom, and form very regular streets, having canals running through most of them, with trees planted on each side of them, so that this city may be justly call'd a fine place to look at; but I confess that I think the sight is the only sense that is gratified here, for when the tide is low, in the canals, they smell very offensively; and breed great numbers of moskitoes, and flies, which are more troublesome here than ever I felt them in any other part of the world. As to eatables, they are in general but indifferent, scarce, and dear. The city itself is strongly fortified for these parts of the world, but there is nothing to protect the ships in the road.

Remarks on  
the Chinese  
living in Ba-  
tavia.

A great part of the inhabitants of Batavia are Chinese, who are remarkable there for wearing

wea  
hair  
no g  
ger  
the  
lutio  
imp  
not  
for r  
fons  
to b  
ent)  
life  
tar  
cept  
lock  
The  
in th  
tion,  
of a  
for  
if th  
mou  
I sho  
ation  
repo  
a bu  
the c

wearing their ancient Chinese dress, with their hair rowl'd up in such a manner that there is no great difference to be discerned, by a stranger at least, between the mens appearance and the womens. Ever since the Tartarian revolution in China, the Tartar dress has been imposed upon the whole kingdom, which was not effected it seems, without great bloodshed, for many of the Chinese were so superstitiously fond of their old modes (as they are reported to be great lovers of every thing that is ancient) that many of them preferr'd the loss of life to the loss of their hair, it being the Tartar custom to shave their heads all over except the crown, from whence hangs a long lock, which is carefully preserved and braided. The Dutch, have laid hold of this humour in those Chinese who live under their protection, and exact from all the men a poll-tax of a dollar a month (if I am not mistaken) for the liberty of wearing their hair, which if they paid but a dollar a year for, would amount to a considerable revenue, and which I should think, would be an unreasonable taxation upon the Chinese, especially when it is reported that the Chinese are so far from being a burden to this great colony, that they are the chief supporters of it.

Whilst



A. D. 1721. Whilst we were at Batavia, captain Hill was informed there were several pirates in these seas; he therefore when he departed

Departure  
from Batavia.

from Batavia, joined the Dutch homeward bound fleet in Bantam-bay. The Dutch commodore promised to assist him in wooding and watering at Mew-island, the water at Batavia being very bad.

We meet  
the Frances in  
the straits of  
Sunda.

We met the Frances in the straits of Sunda, who we imagined had been a great way a-head of us. Upon our joining captain Newsham, the Dutch made it a pretence to leave us before we got the length of Mew-island, and captain Newsham also deserted us the same evening, so that we were left to ourselves.

Arrival at  
Mew-island.

We continued at Mew-island six or seven days, during which time several boats came to us from Princes-island, and brought us turtle, coco-nuts, pine-apples, and other fruits; some of these informed us, there had been two or three ships at this island a few days before us, which gave us some uneasiness, not conceiving what they could be.

Some of the people having seen wild cat-  
tle grazing near the strand, went on shore with design to kill them; but before they had advanced near enough, they discovered a small tyger, and saw the track of an old one, upon  
which

wh  
som  
ship  
Rh  
H  
pass  
whi  
capt  
the  
part  
dista  
but  
dista  
even  
I ha  
of h  
the  
like  
T  
and  
mak  
tion  
ings  
in t  
Hop  
Sout  
the  
coast

which they retired to the boat. At this place some of the gentlemen belonging to this ship, in their outward bound passage, saw a Rhinoceros.

A. D.

1721.

From Mew-island we had a very pleasant passage to and about the cape of Good Hope, which, in my opinion, was greatly owing to captain Hill's good conduct in coming in with the land betimes, I mean upon the Eastermost part of the bank, and keeping a moderate distance from the land. I cannot be positive, but I think we never exceeded a degree in distance from it, generally less, and sometimes even made the land itself. The three voyages I have been this way, I had the good fortune of being with gentlemen who proceeded in the same manner as captain Hill did, with the like success.

Departure  
from Mew-i-  
sland.

The small experience of my own before, and an instance or two in this last passage, makes me of opinion there is too much caution used in coming in with the land in soundings; for it is known that the severest gales in this part, viz. near the cape of Good Hope, reign from the North-west to the South-west. The first quarter blows off from the land, and the other is a bold wind on the coast, and it is likewise known, that the wind

Remarks on  
the passage  
round the  
cape of Good  
Hope.

out

A. D. 1721. out of the sea has scarce ever been observed to blow strong for a time, and never home to the shore. This I have been informed of, both by English and Dutchmen of greater experience than myself, in these parts of the world.

I don't remember that in all the time we were approaching the cape of Good Hope, we took in our top-sails above once for a squall, which was over in an hour's time: and another time, being threatened by the appearance of bad weather, captain Hill made all the requisite preparations to receive it, which done, he stood in for the land, under hopes of avoiding the seemingly approaching storm, in which he was undoubtedly right in his judgment, for in a few hours we had fair weather, a favourable gale, and all our small sails set, at the same time, that there remained great appearance of foul weather to the Southward of us, which continued for several days afterwards. This I should not have observed, did not what I am going to relate, evidently demonstrate, that it may blow hard Westwardly at some distance from the land, when you may have fair weather near the shore.

I have observ'd before, that the Frances, and the Dutch-ships had seven days the advantage

van  
of  
the  
ces  
very  
Dut  
arriv  
T  
acco  
belo  
suffe  
we,  
to th  
joy'd  
tinua  
we d  
seven  
think  
pursu  
verno  
and  
W  
nothi  
so of  
it tha  
been

vantage of us, by leaving us in the streights of Sunda, notwithstanding which we gain'd the cape about as many days before the Frances did, although, at the same time, she sail'd very considerably better than we, and as to the Dutch-ships, there was no shew at all of their arrival when we left the cape.

The officers of our ship, by comparing their accounts with those of some of the gentlemen belonging to the Frances, found that she had suffer'd a great deal of bad weather, whilst we, who were ten leagues, or there-about, to the Northward of them, or nearer shore, enjoy'd fine pleasant weather, and fair wind, continually, till we arrived in the table bay, which we did the latter end of March, one thousand seven hundred and twenty-two. This I should think of sufficient weight for any other to pursue the same track. Here we found governor Boon, in the London East India man, and others bound for England.

Whilst we lay at the cape of Good-Hope, nothing remarkable occur'd, and it has been so often described, that I can say nothing of it that has not been said by most who have been here before.

From

A. D.  
1722.Departure  
from the cape.

From the cape of Good-Hope, we had an agreeable passage to the Island of St. Helena, and from thence to England.

Arrival in  
the channel.

We made the lands end in the latter end of July, and being come into the British channel, met with brisk gales from the western quarter with thick foggy weather.

Anchor at  
Dungeness.Arrival at  
London.

On July the thirtieth, in the evening we anchor'd under Dungeness, and the same night some of the super-cargoes and passengers, and amongst the rest myself, hir'd a small vessel to carry us to Dover, where we arriv'd early the next morning, and the same day proceeded towards London, where we arrived on the first of August.

Thus ended a long and unfortunate voyage of three years, seven months, and some days; after having sail'd very considerably more than round the circumference of the Earth, and having gone through a great variety of dangers, and distresses, both on sea and shore.

F I N I S.



had an  
Melena,

er end  
British  
e west-

ing we  
e same  
passen-  
hir'd a  
ere we  
ne same  
ere we

voyage  
e days;  
ore than  
and ha-  
dangers,